

Univerzita Karlova v Praze
Filozofická fakulta
Ústav anglického jazyka a didaktiky
Filologie – Anglický jazyk



Orkida Backus Borshi

**Formální vyjadřování kategorie určenosti v albánštině.
Popis na základě srovnání s angličtinou**

**Formal Expression of Definiteness in Albanian.
A Description Based on Comparison with English**

Disertační práce

vedoucí práce - Prof. PhDr. Aleš Klégr
2015

„Prohlašuji, že jsem disertační práci napsala samostatně s využitím pouze uvedených a řádně citovaných pramenů a literatury a že práce nebyla využita v rámci jiného vysokoškolského studia či k získání jiného nebo stejného titulu.“

V Praze dne 08.12. 2015

Orkida Backus Borshi

Falënderim:

Dua të falënderoj drejtuesin e punës sime të doktoratës, zotin prof. PhDr. Aleš Klégr, për ndihmën, mbështetjen dhe kujdesin e veçantë që më ka dhënë sidomos në fazën përfundimtare të këtij disertacioni.

Ju falemnderit, zoti profesor!

Abstrakt

Práce popisuje způsoby vyjadřování kategorie určenosti v albánštině. Vzhledem k tomu, že kategorie určenost nebyla dosud v tomto jazyce zevrubně popsána, používá práce jako východiska popis této kategorie v angličtině, kde byla naopak podrobena detailnímu rozboru mnoha autory z různých hledisek teoretických i praktických.

Klíčová slova: albánština, angličtina, určitý člen, určitá forma, reference, srovnávací lingvistika

Abstract

This thesis describes the means of expressing the category of definiteness in Albanian. Inasmuch as this category has not been comprehensively analyzed in this language so far, the starting point of the thesis is the description of this category in English which, by contrast, has been subject to a detailed analysis by many authors from different aspects both theoretical and practical.

Keywords: Albanian, English, definite article, definite form, reference, contrastive description

I vogli mëson nga i madhi (fjalë popullore shqiptare)
The little one learns from his big fellow (old Albanian saying)

Table of Contents

Abstrakt	4
Abstract	4
Abbreviations	8
Introduction	9
1. Theoretical background – literature survey	14
1.1 Definite descriptions – theory of reference – a philosophical insight.....	14
1.2 The category of definiteness – a linguistic insight	22
1.2.1 Definite articles	22
1.2.2 Linguistic conceptualization of definiteness	24
1.2.3 The grammaticalization of definite articles	33
1.3 The expression of definiteness in Albanian.....	34
1.3.1 The development of the category of definiteness in Albanian	34
1.3.2 Remarks on articles in postposition in some of the Balkan languages	37
1.3.3 Current accounts of the expression of definiteness in Albanian	39
1.3.3.1 Albanian prepositive article/element	40
1.3.3.2 Albanian definite postpositive article	54
1.3.4 Reference grammar account of in/definiteness in noun uses in Albanian.....	57
1.4 Reference grammar accounts of the expression of definiteness in English	61
1.4.1 English Common Nouns and Definiteness.....	61
1.4.2 The English definite article with generic reference.....	69
1.4.3 Proper nouns and the idea of “ <i>properhood</i> ”	70
1.4.4 English proper nouns and definiteness	73
2. Research project - data sources, collection and analysis	79
2.1 Introduction to the Albanian corpus	79
2.1.1 The use of the corpus.....	84
2.2. System-oriented investigation: uses of definite forms in Albanian.....	85
2.2.1 Empirical analysis of definiteness in Albanian common nouns.....	85
2.2.1.1 Albanian definite common nouns with non-generic reference.....	86
2.2.1.2 Albanian common nouns with generic reference	96
2.2.2 Albanian proper names and in/definiteness.....	103
2.2.2.1 Definiteness with Albanian anthroponyms.....	104
2.2.2.2 Definiteness with Albanian toponyms.....	115
2.2.2.3 Definiteness with Albanian chrematonyms	121
2.2.2.4 Concluding remarks on proper names in Albanian and English	123
2.3 Text-oriented investigation.....	125
2.3.1 Marcuse text: English-to-Albanian definite reference correlation.....	125
2.3.2 Marcuse text: Albanian-to-English definite reference correlation.....	133
2.3.3 Rowling text: English-to-Albanian/Albanian-to-English definite reference correlation.....	135
2.3.4 Marcuse text: in/definiteness marker distribution in English and Albanian ...	139
2.3.5 Rowling text: in/definiteness marker distribution in English and Albanian ...	141
3. Conclusions.....	142
Résumé.....	147
References.....	153
Appendix	159
H. Marcuse text (English version) – definite occurrences	159
H. Marcuse text (Albanian version) – definite occurrences.....	163
J.K. Rowling text (English version) – definite occurrences.....	168
J.K. Rowling text (Albanian version) – definite occurrences	177

List of Tables

Table 1: Dryer and Haspelmath's list of in/definiteness markers	23
Table 2: The genitive preceded by the nominative	42
Table 3: The genitive preceded by the accusative.....	42
Table 4: The genitive preceded by the genitive/dative/ablative.....	42
Table 5: Masculine indefinite noun + adjective with article	43
Table 6: Masculine definite noun + adjective with article	43
Table 7: Feminine indefinite noun + adjective with article	44
Table 8: Feminine definite noun + adjective with article.....	44
Table 9: Declension of the <i>kush-who</i> pronoun.....	46
Table 10: Declension of the <i>cili-who</i> masculine pronoun.....	46
Table 11: Declension of the <i>cila -who</i> feminine pronoun	46
Table 12: Declension of the <i>i cili-the one who</i> masculine pronoun	47
Table 13: Declension of the <i>e cila-the one who</i> feminine pronoun	47
Table 14: Declension of possessive pronouns – first person	47
Table 15: Declension of possessive pronouns – second person.....	48
Table 16: Declension of possessive pronouns – third person	48
Table 17: Masculine indefinite noun + ordinal numeral	48
Table 18: Masculine definite noun + ordinal numeral	49
Table 19: Feminine indefinite noun + ordinal numeral.....	49
Table 20: Feminine definite noun + ordinal numeral.....	49
Table 21: First declension of Albanian nouns	56
Table 22: Second declension of Albanian nouns	56
Table 23: Third declension of Albanian nouns	56
Table 24: Fourth declension of Albanian nouns.....	57
Table 25: Uses of the English articles with non-generic reference.....	63
Table 26: Uses of the English articles with generic reference	63
Table 27: Journals ordered according to word count	82
Table 28: Agreement among Albanian speakers translating generic sentences from English	98
Table 29: An overview of onomastic (sub) categories	104
Table 30: Distribution of personal proper noun/name combinations found in the corpus.....	106
Table 31: Proper nouns: first name and surname in combination.....	107
Table 32: Marcuse text analysis: English nouns with <i>the</i> and their Albanian equivalents	127
Table 33: Comparison of English and Albanian definite noun equivalents in the Marcuse text	134
Table 34: Comparison of English and Albanian definite noun equivalents in the Rowling text	138
Table 35: Comparison of English/Albanian definite noun equivalents in the Marcuse/Rowling texts....	139
Table 36: The overall proportion of definite and indefinite reference nouns in the Marcuse text... 140	
Table 37: The overall proportion of definite and indefinite reference nouns in (a) the Rowling text, and (b) both Marcuse and Rowling texts	141

Abbreviations

A.C.	ante Christum, before Christ
adj.	adjective
Alb	Albanian
BCE	before the Common Era
CGEL	Quirk et al., A Comprehensive Grammar of the English Language
def.	definite
EFL	English as a foreign language
Eng	English
F	feminine
fem.	feminine
ff	following pages
FSP	functional sentence perspective
gen.	genitive
IE	Indo-European
indef.	indefinite
M	masculine
masc.	masculine
nom.	nominative
NP	noun phrase
Od	direct object
OE	Old English
OED	Oxford English Dictionary
Oi	indirect object
pl.	plural
sg.	singular

Introduction

English and Albanian belong to the same language family, i.e. the Indo-European group. English is a member of the West-Germanic branch of the Indo-European languages, whereas Albanian (standing on its own) forms an isolated branch with considerable archaic features. The Indo-European origin of Albanian was first recognized by Franz Bopp in 1854. The details of the main correspondences of Albanian with other Indo-European languages were elaborated by another German philologist, Gustav Meyer, in the late 19th century. Further linguistic details and revisions were introduced by the Danish linguist Holger Pedersen and his Austrian colleague Norbert Jokl.

Albanian is of special interest in the study of languages because of its isolated and unique position. As it is not part of any larger subgroup of the Indo-European languages, it holds its specific linguistic place alongside the principal branches in the family. This is true in spite of the fact that the language is spoken by a relatively small number of people around the world.

The typological classification of languages developed by Vladimír Skalička, followed by Petr Sgall (1971, 1975, 1986, 1993, 1995) and Jaroslav Popela (1985, 1988, 2006) divides languages into isolating, inflectional, agglutinating, introflexional and polysynthetic. According to this typology, English (which has undergone dramatic changes during its development) is regarded as a typical example of an isolating (analytical) language. The grammatical relations are realized by analytical means (through word order and function words) which make up for the scarcity of form variation.

Albanian, on the other hand, corresponds to the inflectional type. From the grammatical point of view, Albanian, in spite of many archaic traits, bears similarities to Modern Greek and the Romance languages. Nouns are declined in a system of four cases and the inflection shows number and gender. An exceptional feature of Albanian grammar is the inflection of nouns in the article; the noun displays formal changes that specify either definite or general reference. Nouns, with a few exceptions (numerals being one), are followed by their adjectives, and an agreeing particle is required by the adjective; the particle is located between the noun and the adjective.

Despite various differences between both of the languages in question, especially the typological variance, there are certain things that English and Albanian have historically in common: in addition to both belonging to the same language family, the situation of Old English and its inflectional declension shows some similarities with Albanian (a four-case system, etc.). Another thing which they have in common is the expression of definiteness by means of the article. From a typological point of view, articles as markers of a grammatical category are attested in only one third of the languages of the world (Dryer, 1989), and only 8 per cent of these languages have

both a definite and an indefinite article. In the remaining languages definiteness is marked by other means such as word order, case inflection, verb agreement, stress and intonation (Krámský, 1972). The fact that both Albanian and English use the definite article (although of a different type) to express definite reference naturally raises the question as to what extent the uses of this article in the two languages are in correspondence. One of the aims of this dissertation is to attempt to provide an answer to this question.

However, due to historical factors, the grammatical description of Albanian is not very detailed compared to other languages, especially English. This fact means that there is still a lot of room for improvement. Specifically, it offers the possibility to clear up the present status of the article and its function in Albanian by making use of, and applying to it, the state-of-the-art description of the category of definiteness in English. The model for the description will be the account of articles in British English, where the category of definiteness has been analysed in most detail.

This study consists of two key parts: a theoretical background starting with the general philosophical and linguistic perspective on definiteness and the article systems in Albanian and English and an empirical research project proper which applies the theoretical framework established in the first part to Albanian article usage in actual texts.

The theoretical part deals with the concept of definiteness at three levels of abstraction, each will be covered here by a separate chapter. At the most general of the three levels, definiteness which is interrelated with reference and words-to-world fit and hence a philosophical issue is treated under the heading of definite descriptions. This chapter reviews the development of approaches to definite descriptions from the 19th century up to the present. At the next level, the category of definiteness is considered in terms of its formal reflection in language which makes it the topic of linguistics. This chapter on the category of definiteness from a linguistic viewpoint summarizes the mechanisms and means used to express definite reference in Indo-European languages. It specifically deals with the emergence of the article as a grammatical means of signalling the category of definiteness. In connection with this, a theory correlating the loss of noun inflection in the development of languages and the appearance of the system of articles, as compensation for the deconcretisation of meaning of this part of speech (Hewson, 1972), is mentioned. From this point of view, English and Albanian seem to represent different stages in the development.

Finally, at the most concrete level, the theoretical part traces the development and the state of the research on the category of definiteness in both Albanian and English. The situation in the two languages is very different. In Albanian, the status of definiteness and the way it is expressed is still a matter for debate, therefore a historical overview and a comparison with some other Balkan

languages is provided. In standard Albanian grammars the description of the category of definiteness is mostly conceived as the in/definite meaning of nouns (together with the article or the adjective with the “definite” declension). It can be found especially in recent grammars (de Angély, 1998; Boissin, 1998; Demiraj, 1985; Hamp, 1972; Newmark, Hubbard, Prifti, 1982, Domi et al., 2002). Separate monographs, articles or papers dealing with this question, if they exist, are not commonly accessible. Locating and describing them is one of the aims of this work.

Given the scarcity of information, the aim of this chapter is to offer a survey of the opinions on the expression of definiteness in Albanian from the sources at hand. The passages dealing with definiteness in Albanian grammars are not numerous, nor are they very extensive. This chapter therefore brings together the most important mentions and pays attention to what the grammars deal with in greater detail, the form/s, position and combination of Albanian articles. It was found necessary to provide an overview of these.

In English the category of in/definiteness has been given a great deal more attention than in Albanian. We can find systematic descriptions of articles in standard grammars starting from Sweet’s (1892) grammar, to a more detailed account in Jespersen’s (1949) *A Modern English Grammar on Historical Principles*, up to the major contemporary synchronic grammars, Quirk et al. (1985) and Huddleston and Pullum (2002). Since the 1930s there has been a line of monographs on the English articles. One of the most significant is Christophersen’s (1939) study which for a long time dominated the field. Other authors dealing with the topic were Jespersen (1949), Yotsukura (1970), Krámský (1972), Hewson (1972), Hawkins (1978), Kaluža (1981), Chesterman (1991) and, most recently, Lyons (2003). Especially the last two are very helpful in that they give brief, critical surveys of the differences between individual concepts in the main approaches that have addressed the subject so far.

In addition to theoretical accounts, the thesis draws for information on English article usage in authoritative reference grammars. In the Czech Republic, the most systematic and consistent contrastive description to the category of definiteness in English based on different types of references is presented in *Mluvnice současné angličtiny na pozadí češtiny* (Dušková, 1988, 2003), drawing on the best of the British tradition. This work adopts a very useful and detailed contrastive approach combining the Czech perspective mainly with the findings of *A Comprehensive Grammar of the English Language* (1985). An alternative approach can be found in another reference grammar, Huddleston and Pullum’s (2002) *The Cambridge Grammar of the English Language*. The present thesis provides a detailed overview of the main ideas and positions adopted in these sources.

Thus the chapter focuses on the expression of definiteness in English and attempts a synthesis of both the theoretical approaches and practical descriptions of English article usage so far. Above all, it offers an overall account of the theoretical aspects of definite reference and the basic

principles of the use of definite articles in English.

As the title suggests, the main strategy for describing definite reference and the use of the definite article in Albanian is comparison-driven, using the sophisticated framework developed for English as its basis. In the English grammars mentioned above, the starting point is the examination of English common nouns and how they relate to definiteness. In the next step, the focus is on the concept of proper nouns and how definiteness affects them in English and finally, a separate chapter is dedicated to the English definite article with generic reference. This procedure forms the model for the description of the expression of definiteness in Albanian common and proper nouns and the use of the definite article with common nouns with generic reference.

Inasmuch as the comparison of the formal expression of definiteness, i.e. by means of the definite article, in Albanian and English is bidirectional, the study seeks the answers to the following two questions:

- 1) What happens with Albanian common nouns and proper nouns in a context where English nouns are found with the definite article?
- 2) What happens with English common and proper nouns in a context where Albanian nouns are found with the definite article?

The answers are provided in the second part of the dissertation, the empirical research project.

The research project expects to discover both overlaps and asymmetries in the use of the definite article and the aim is to describe them. All in all, the research project itself is divided into two major parts. After introducing the Albanian corpus, the investigation focuses first on the comparison of the English and the Albanian system of the articles and their use with common nouns and proper nouns. The second part of the investigation explores the distribution and use of articles in consecutive texts in both directions. The first part of the system-oriented analysis concentrates on common nouns and discusses them from two viewpoints. First, it examines common nouns that in English appear with the definite article that expresses singulative reference. The research is conducted from parallel translations and a corpus collected for the purposes of this work. In this part, we will mainly look for common nouns that appear with the definite article and their Albanian counterparts. The selection is based on syntactically similar examples, i.e. with corresponding grammatical cases, etc.

The next viewpoint applies to the combination of the definite article + a common noun where the definite article expresses generic reference. This part of the analysis represents an elicitation of information from native speakers of Albanian. A group of Albanian native speakers were given a couple of sentences with minimal context (mostly driven from various English grammars), where the definite article is used in a generic sense. They were asked to intuitively translate the selected examples in to Albanian. The presupposition is that they were fluent in English.

The second part of the system-oriented investigation is dedicated to the occurrence of proper nouns. The starting point is the individual use of English proper nouns with the definite article and their Albanian counterparts. Since this survey does not cover all uses of the combination: definite article + proper noun, a general survey of proper nouns that appears in the theoretical part will be added as a starting point of the analysis. For this part of the research project we used data from a corpus created for the purposes of the study and some additional sources from the internet.

The text-oriented investigation works with two pairs of parallel texts of non-fiction and fiction and employs both qualitative and quantitative analysis taking first the English and the Albanian text as the starting point with somewhat surprising results.

The material for the research part of the description of the situation in Albanian is derived only from written language such as Internet based research, corpus information and also elicitation of sentences from Albanian native speakers and their subsequent translation into English. The corpus analysis was collected from three different stylistic areas: journalistic style, administrative style and fiction. The corpus analysis is made using the software Antconc 3.2.1. with texts in .txt format.

All in all, the objective of the study is to provide – via contrast with English – a solid support for the description of definiteness in Albanian which can help to fill in gaps and/or clarify random explanations relating to this category. In other words, English is being used as a major language helping/supporting a minor language in its description.

1. Theoretical background – literature survey

1.1 Definite descriptions – theory of reference – a philosophical insight

Definiteness in language is part of a much broader issue, i.e. the theory of reference, and as such is of relevance, at different levels of abstraction, to several fields of study concerned with language, especially philosophy of language, logic, and linguistics (general linguistics, pragmatics, and the linguistics of specific languages).

Accordingly the literature dealing with the subject can be possibly divided into two major groups. The first one falls into a formal, philosophical and logical tradition (under the heading of definite descriptions), the second one is represented by a linguistic tradition. Of course, both approaches often go hand in hand and do not exclude one another. One thing they have in common is the fact that nouns (as a part of speech), are central to the whole issue of definiteness.

It goes without saying that no description of definiteness in language can truly escape the philosophical and logical aspects of this topic. While the reference of a word can simply be described as what it stands for, it is a much debated issue in the philosophy of language and in logic whether the reference of definite descriptions (such as “the Queen of England”, “the table”), and that of proper names (such as “London”, “Julia”, etc.), is one and the same thing and should be treated in the same manner or not, and what mechanism in fact secures the reference.

Before presenting the views of the most influential authors in greater detail, it will be useful to offer a highly simplified and schematized outline of how the views on reference have developed. It is usually accepted that the starting point in the modern controversy surrounding reference is John Stuart Mill’s (1843/1973) conception that has come to be known as the **direct reference** theory of names (cf. the referential theory of meaning below). In response to his position two competing approaches have been subsequently proposed. The first to appear actually includes two theories, **description theory of reference** (also called theory of descriptions), and its more sophisticated version, the **cluster theory of reference**. As a reaction to them, an alternative approach was suggested, the **causal theory of reference** (including a **rigid designators** claim).

The Millian view, or **direct reference** theory, holds that the meaning of a linguistic expression is the object it refers to, in other words the expression directly refers to the object. As there is no meaning or sense standing between the word and its referent, this act of reference is all that this expression contributes to the meaning of the sentence in which it occurs. The standard objection is that if reference is the whole contribution to the sentence, then the two sentences ‘The author is Mark Twain’ and ‘The author is Samuel L. Clemens’ must be identical in meaning (provided we know that Mark Twain is the pseudonym of Samuel L. Clemens). The problem is known as Frege’s puzzle of identity (1892a). Frege resolves it by making a distinction between reference and sense

(descriptive connotation). Accordingly the two sentences are different because they carry different cognitive significance by expressing different thoughts (the author whose real name is ..., the author is the person known under the pseudonym ...).

Frege himself had a different kind of problem with the reference of definite descriptions such as “the King of France” or “the Chelsea player”. The first appears to fail to refer because there being no king in France there is no referent the expression can refer to. In the latter expression the reference in some contexts may be unclear as there could be more than one definite player. Definite descriptions with no or unclear reference would make the sentences in which they are used dubious in terms of truth value. The problem is addressed by Russell (1905, 1910-11, 1919) who maintains that the definite reference of definite descriptions derives from their quantified nature – the sentence ‘The King of France is bald’ is to be interpreted as ‘There is at least one thing and there is at most one thing such that, that thing is the King of France and that thing is bald’. Moreover, Russell claims that quantified definite descriptions underlie even proper names, and the two should be treated in the same way. The view that proper names are, as it were, abbreviations of definite descriptions (thus ‘Aristotle’ is the abbreviated form of ‘the teacher of Alexander’) is called **description theory of reference**.

The idea of treating proper names as (abbreviated) definite descriptions is regarded as untenable particularly by Kripke (1980) who says that in sentences involving modal meaning proper names and definite descriptions are not interchangeable, i.e. proper names defy modal modification and so they cannot be abbreviations of the latter. Kripke explains this by pointing out that proper names are **rigid designators** because they can only refer to certain specific referents (in his case Saul A. Kripke), while definite descriptions such as ‘the Prime Minister’ are typically non-rigid because they can refer to different people. However, some definite descriptions can be rigid, e.g. ‘The sum of $1 + 1$ ’ as it always refers to the number 2.

In order to cope with some of the objections made by Strawson (1950) and Kripke (especially the non-modal ones), the idea of proper names as abbreviated definite descriptions was reworked in the so-called **cluster theory of reference** by Searle (1958). The name of the theory is due to the fact that rather than viewing a proper name as an abbreviation of one definite description, it claims that a proper name abbreviates a whole cluster of definite descriptions most of which, but not necessarily all, meet the referent of the name.

Kripke proposes a different solution, which together with various other related views comes under the heading **causal theory of reference**. The key word is ‘causal’: a definite expression is linked to its referent through a causal relation. A proper name refers to the person it names because once the person was given this name not only his or her parents start to use it but also other people

“borrow” the name and use it (a practice called **reference borrowing**). The reference thus becomes fixed through a causal chain of speakers who use the name. The theory seems to work equally well for natural kind terms (natural kinds are objects that can be grouped into categories or taxonomic classifications on the basis of shared characteristics of some sort, e.g. *lion*, *lemon*, *water* or *salt*; Koslicki, 2008). With these the speaker first establishes the reference of the term on encountering a specimen of the given natural kind (say *a lion*) and the term is then causally linked and applied to all objects that share the same nature (*lions*). Other speakers then borrow the reference from the first user and the term becomes associated with the shared characteristics of the given kind. Thus apart from a reference, natural kind terms (or, to put it in a simplified way, general names) may also acquire a sense through associations with descriptive characteristics. Kripke’s conclusions revive Mill’s view that proper names have only reference but contradict his view that the same applies to natural kind terms.

The above synopsis, relying mostly on Tanesini (2007), is elegantly summarized in Devitt and Hanley’s (2006: 11) quotation:

For instance, J. S. Mill (1843) argued that a proper name like ‘Dartmouth’ does not depend for its reference on any descriptive associations it may have, but he thought general names like ‘horse’ had their reference determined by an associated description. Frege (1892), as we have already noted, thought all names were descriptive, and indeed that proper names were equivalent to definite descriptions, a view espoused and defended by Russell (1905, 1919). Their views were orthodox until overturned, largely by Kripke (1980), who argued that Mill was right about proper names and wrong about general names. In the last forty-plus years, philosophers of language have continued this lively exchange, and turned the same critical focus upon other referring expressions, including descriptions themselves, all the while attending to developments in – with the hope of reciprocal illumination – logic and linguistics.

While this outline is useful in providing the reader not versed in the philosophy of language and logic with the basic, though somewhat simplified guidelines to help him get his bearings, in the following an attempt will be made to supply some additional information that may put things into better perspective.

What may not be immediately clear from the initial survey of theories of reference is that the question of reference is inseparable from the question of meaning. That is why Lycan (2000) puts ‘meaning and reference’ in the title of the first chapter of his introduction to philosophy of language. As his first task he sees the necessity to dispel the widespread idea that “words and more complex linguistic expressions have their meanings by standing for things in the world” (p. 2). This

view (cf. Mill's direct reference) is called the **referential theory of meaning** and Lycan cites three objections that challenge it: (1) many words do not name or denote any actual object in the world either because the object is nonexistent, it is an abstract quality or their referent is elusive (words like "sake", "behalf", "very", "of", etc.); (2) a sentence is not – as the theory implies – a list of names, its elements have to be linked by verbs that relate them and finding the referents of verbs involves us in a chain of abstract entities that stand for the verbs (Bradley's regress); (3) finally, that there is more than reference to meaning, i.e. two terms may share their referent but their meaning is not the same ('Benedict XVI' and 'the Pope'). Lycan then spends the following two chapters presenting theories of reference that try to deal with the problem of reference-meaning in a more successful way. His account is fuller than that of Tanesini's and it may be worthwhile to add some of Lycan's information to the initial outline based on Tanesini.

Russell's **theory of descriptions**, inspired by Frege's puzzles of identity and substitutivity, sets out to prove that definite descriptions actually do contribute meanings "that go beyond their referents alone". The theory, rather than defining definite descriptions explicitly, takes the form of a contextual definition of the article 'the' and attempts to paraphrase sentences containing 'the' (or other definite determiners) in a way that would show the role of 'the' indirectly and reveal their "logical forms". Using a sophisticated logical notation, Russell argues that in the sentence 'The author of Waverley was Scotch' (which seemingly refers to an individual, Sir Walter Scott), the article 'the' abbreviates a more complex construction, in fact a conjunction of three quantified general statements (without referring specifically to Scott): (a) at least one person authored Waverley; (b) at most one person authored Waverley; (c) whoever authored Waverley was Scotch.

The trick is that on this analysis the apparent singular term is replaced by generalized statements and so it disappears. All the problems (such as Frege's puzzle or apparent reference to nonexistent entities), Russell claims, are due to applying singular reference to expressions that only masquerade as such. Lycan, however, points out that there have been a number of objections to the theory of descriptions made particularly by Strawson (1950), such as that Russell's logical analysis is too abstract and ignores that sentences are used by real people and have standard conversational uses. There is one objection which is particularly interesting. It was made by Donnellan (1966), who noticed that Russell missed a specific use of definite descriptions in which they do function as mere labels for individuals. Such a description is typically capitalized and used as a title, for example the expression "The Holy Roman Empire" or the name of a rock band "The Grateful Dead" (when used in a sentence it does not mean that at least one person is dead and grateful, etc.). Such definite descriptions can be successful in referring although there is nothing that would literally meet the description. Donnellan calls this use referential and distinguishes it from the attributive use when the description must refer to the one object that satisfies the description or else

it fails in its reference.

In spite of these objections, Russell's theory of descriptions seems to have disproved the referential theory of meaning by showing that definite descriptions are not, logically viewed, singular terms. The question remains, though, whether his theory can account for names, i.e. proper nouns, and thus refute even for them the referential theory of meaning, Mill's direct reference. The question is relevant for the simple reason that all four problems or puzzles that motivated his theory of definite descriptions (apparent reference to nonexistents; negative existentials: Pegasus does not exist; Frege's identity problem: Clemens = Twain; and that of substitutivity), apply to names as well.

Russell resolves the question by claiming that proper names are not genuinely names at the level of logical form, only in the sense of surface grammar. Just as definite descriptions are not singular expressions in logical terms, so are proper names actually quantified general statements. This, in other words, makes them equivalent to definite descriptions, and indeed Russell argues that proper names are abbreviations of definite descriptions just as the "USA" is a short for "the United State of America". So the theory of descriptions was made to cover both definite descriptions and proper names.

Lycan (ibid: 40-47) quotes seven objections to Russell's claim, such as Searle's that for a proper name to be equivalent to a definite description, then each name must have one. It seems, however, that not only is it difficult to figure out which one the speaker means, but there may be cases when the speaker has not definite description in mind at all. Searle's and especially Kripke's objections resulted in alternative proposals.

As was mentioned in the initial outline, Searle's variant of the description theory is called the cluster theory. It assumes that a proper name is linked not with any particular description but with a vague cluster of descriptions, i.e. a sufficient, but unspecified number of "standard identifying statements". In other words, the proper name refers to any object that satisfies a sufficient, but unspecified and vague number of descriptions generally tied with it. The vagueness is exactly what differentiates proper names from definite descriptions, it is the reason why we want to use them instead of descriptions. While Russell's idea of names as abbreviations for descriptions turns names into mere time-saving devices, Searle sees proper names as a "peg ... on which to hang descriptions". Hence the objection that for each name there must be a specific description is avoided as the name is linked semantically to an unspecified cluster of descriptions. The Searlean approach is viewed as an attempt to find a middle way between Russell's and Mill's conceptions.

Kripke's critique of both Russell's and Searle's theory consists of several objections. One of them is related to so-called modal questions, i.e. questions dealing with the possibility or necessity of an event. In terms of the description theory, he says, the name 'Richard Nixon' equals the definite

description 'the winner of the 1968 US Presidential election'. Now if we ask about the hypothetical possibility 'Could Richard Nixon have lost the 1968 election?', the answer is very clearly yes. From the point of view of the description theory, however, it is possible to reword this question as 'Could the winner of the 1968 US Presidential election have lost the 1968 election?' In that case, the answer is obviously 'No, he couldn't'. This discrepancy is not rescued even by Searle's cluster theory with its assumption of an unspecified and vague number of possible descriptions fitting the referent in question.

Kripke's objections are for the most part aimed at the description theory which, he argues, will predict either the wrong referent or no referent whatsoever (by resulting in indefinite cases or by failing to account for cases the speaker has no particular description in mind). As was mentioned above he offers to redress this by putting forward two proposals. One is that by equating definite descriptions and proper names Russell misses an important difference between them.

It may be useful to mention a terminological distinction made by Kripke (1980, 24) when discussing the difference:

By a name here I will mean a proper name, i.e., the name of a person, a city, a country, etc. It is well known that modern logicians also are very interested in definite descriptions: phrases of the form 'the x such that x ', such as 'the man who corrupted Hadleyburg'. Now, if one and only one man ever corrupted Hadleyburg, then that man is the referent, in the logician's sense, of that description. We will use the term 'name' so that it does *not* include definite descriptions of that sort, but only those things which in ordinary language would be called 'proper names'. If we want a common term to cover names and descriptions, we may use the term 'designator',

Kripke describes the difference in the following way. Proper names do not vary their reference across worlds and hypothetical situations; thus Aristotle in the real world and Aristotle in a possible world that we may imagine may have some different features and may be doing, but the name denotes the same referent. By contrast Russell's definite descriptions will in different situations, hypothetical worlds refer each time to something else. Accordingly Kripke (1980: 48) suggests: "Let's call something a *rigid designator* if in every possible world it designates the same object, a *nonrigid* or *accidental designator* if that is not the case".

His second proposal - not a worked-out theory as Devitt (1981) succeeded in developing - is known as the **causal** or **causal-historical theory of reference**. Its crucial concept is that of reference being passed on from one speaker to another. This creates a causal-historical chain that goes back to his first use of the name for a particular person. Using a practical example, Kripke (1980, 90-91) sketches out the idea as follows:

Someone, let's say, a baby, is born; his parents call him by a certain name. They talk about him to their friends. Other people meet him. Through various sorts of talk the name is spread from link to link as if by a chain. A speaker who is on the far end of this chain, who has heard about, say Richard Feynman, in the market place or elsewhere, may be referring to Richard Feynman even though he can't remember from whom he first heard of Feynman or from whom he ever heard of Feynman. He knows that Feynman is a famous physicist. A certain passage of communication reaching ultimately to the man himself does reach the speaker. He then is referring to Feynman even though he can't identify him uniquely. He doesn't know what a Feynman diagram is, he doesn't know what the Feynman theory of pair production and annihilation is. Not only that: he'd have trouble distinguishing between Gell-Mann and Feynman. So he doesn't have to know these things, but, instead, a chain of communication going back to Feynman himself has been established, by virtue of his membership in a community which passed the name on from link to link, not by a ceremony that he makes in private in his study: 'By "Feynman" I shall mean the man who did such and such and such and such'.

And he adds an important proviso (p. 96):

An initial 'baptism' takes place. Here the object may be named by ostension, or the reference of the name may be fixed by a description. When the name is 'passed from link to link', the receiver of the name must, I think, intend when he learns it to use it with the same reference as the man from whom he heard it. If I hear the name 'Napoleon' and decide it would be a nice name for my pet aardvark, I do not satisfy this condition.

Subsequently Kripke and Putnam (1975) extended the semantic theory of rigid versus accidental designators and the causal-historical theory to cover mainly natural-kind terms (see above). These are general terms, rather than singular terms; they are conceived of as semantically rigid as each such term refers to the natural kind regardless of the world they occur in. Using the idea of Twin Earth, a duplicate planet within the same world as Earth, and duplicate natural kinds, Kripke and Putnam suggest, to use Lycan's (2000, 68) formulation, that "the meanings of a speech community's words are not entirely determined by the contents of the speakers' and the hearers' heads; the external world makes a contribution also".

In conclusion, we may introduce a linguistic perspective on at least one aspect of these issues. From a linguistic point of view, Christopher Lyons (2003: 21-22) describes the relationship between proper names (or nouns) and definite descriptions and enlarges on it in the following way:

Proper nouns are often said to be referring expressions but to have no sense. They are also sometimes said to be logically equivalent to definite descriptions, in being uniquely

referring expressions.

There may be millions of people called *John* and there are several towns called *Paris*, so context is important for the identification of the referent, as with definite descriptions. But a common view is that we use proper nouns as if they were absolutely unique, corresponding more closely to inherently unique definites (like *the sun*), than to possibly contextually unique definites (like *the man*). When we are conscious of there being more than one possible referent for the name *John* we can either expand it to a fuller proper noun (*John Smith*), or recategorize it as a common noun and add some descriptive material (*the John I introduced you to last night*).

In addition to pointing out that it is their unique reference (ensuring their referents' identifiability), that links proper nouns and definites (whether inherently or contextually unique or not), he poses an interesting question – How do proper nouns differ from inherently unique nouns like *sun*? – and mentions two possible answers (pp. 21-22):

... They have in common that they are both generally used as though they denote a unique entity, but they differ grammatically: *sun* behaves like a common noun in that it takes the article, or some other definite determiner (*the sun, that lucky old sun*); *John*, unless recategorized, generally does not, and in fact is not only a noun, but also a complete noun phrase. One answer is that nouns like *sun* denote singleton sets, while proper nouns denote individuals; this would be in keeping with the view that proper nouns have reference but not sense. Another, implying that proper nouns do have sense, is that both types of noun denote singleton sets, but in the case of *sun* the set just happens to have only one member, while the set satisfying *John* is by definition a single-member set.

He observes that the latter answer (although, as we know, it contradicts Mill's and Kripke's claim that proper names have no sense), offers a plausible explanation why English proper nouns are used without the definite article: "If by definition they denote a singleton set, there is no need to signal the uniqueness of their referent."

Unfortunately the problem does not stop here. If they are definite (and not just semantically similar to definite descriptions), and yet do not take the definite article, where does the definiteness feature reside? In fact, there are languages where proper nouns (typically personal nouns) are used with the definite articles (in Classical Greek *ho Sokrates*), and there proper names are perhaps no different from uniques (like *the sun* in English). Alternatively, one may claim, as Lyons (1995) does, that the absence of the definite article in English proper nouns is due to the fact that they are

actually indefinites or rather generics. And as definite and indefinite generic noun phrases have a similar distribution, proper nouns accordingly display definite behaviour. Whatever view one finds more compelling, it is clear that from a purely linguistic point of view the complex relationship between proper names and definite descriptions has one more aspect in need of explanation: the presence and absence of external formal signals of definiteness.

We may conclude the excursion into the account of the category of definiteness from a philosophical perspective by a brief summary: Definite descriptions, denoting expressions such as “the capital of Wales”, is a concept used in philosophy of language in connection with theories of reference. The on-going controversy about reference starts with John Stuart Mill’s view of direct reference as the basis of both proper and general names. Its next phase is marked by Frege and particularly Russell’s approach termed description theory of reference treating proper names as abbreviated definite descriptions and its sophisticated version, cluster theory of reference, introduced by Searle, both of them attempting to deal with the problems faced by the Millian view. The next stage in this debate is represented by the causal theory of reference by Kripke (and Putnam) which partially vindicates Mill’s view on proper names. In addition to these issues the linguistic perspective, as suggested by Christopher Lyons, introduces some other aspects, such as the formal expression of definiteness, and these will be addressed in the following.

1.2 The category of definiteness – a linguistic insight

While the philosophical–logical tradition is treated in the previous chapter about definite descriptions and theory of reference, the focus of this chapter will be the linguistic approach.

1.2.1 Definite articles

Before sketching the linguistic approach to the grammatical category of definiteness, several things have to be made clear. First of all, we are concerned here with definiteness as formally expressed by definite articles. It should be said at the very beginning that although the English definite article and the Albanian article are formally different they can be treated as one category. In this respect we subscribe to the position taken by Dryer in Dryer and Haspelmath (2005). According to him definite articles subsume three different types of markers as the list in Table 1 shows.

Table 1: Dryer and Haspelmath's list of in/definiteness markers

Value	Representation
● Definite word distinct from demonstrative	216
● Demonstrative word used as marker of definiteness	69
● Definite affix on noun	92
◇ No definite article but indefinite article	45
○ Neither definite nor indefinite article	198
Total:	620

Examining the feature (37A) ‘definite articles’ in 620 languages, Dryer, author of Chapter 37 on Definite Articles (<http://wals.info/chapter/37>), distinguishes the following three formal markers counting as the definite article: definite word distinct from demonstrative, definite affix on noun and demonstrative word used as marker of definiteness. English uses the first type of marker, a distinct definite article; Albanian uses the second type, an affixal article. Dryer explains his concept as follows “... the definite article is a morpheme which accompanies nouns and which codes definiteness or specificity, like ‘the’ in English. This is a somewhat broader use of the term *definite article* than is common, since it includes (i) affixes on nouns that code definiteness; and (ii) demonstratives, if those demonstratives are used as markers of definiteness. In many languages, words that are demonstratives, either in the sense that they can be used deictically with an accompanying gesture or in the sense that they exhibit a distinction in terms of distance (as in the contrast of *this* and *that* in English), are also widely used in contexts where English would use the definite article rather than a demonstrative. In some languages, the definite marker is a clitic which can appear on nouns or on postnominal modifiers, most commonly on the final word in the noun phrase. Such definite clitics are not treated here as definite affixes, but as definite words, falling into one of the first two types. Dryer also singles out what these three forms of definite articles have in common in terms of function: “There are, broadly speaking, two functions associated with definite articles. One of these is an anaphoric function, to refer back to something mentioned in the preceding discourse. The other is a nonanaphoric function, to refer to something not mentioned in the preceding discourse but whose existence is something that the speaker assumes is known to the hearer. This assumed knowledge may be based on general knowledge (as in *the sun*) or it may be based on inferences that the hearer can make in context (for example, inferring from mention of a house that the house has a door, thus making it possible to use the definite article in referring to the door of the house). In some languages, the morphemes treated here as definite articles appear to be

restricted to anaphoric usage in that descriptions assign them translations like ‘previously mentioned’.”

Although the two types of marker found in English and Albanian account for almost half of the 620 languages (and the article as a definite word is more than twice as frequent as the affixal one), the significance of these figures (if any, given the small number of languages examined), is not altogether clear. What is important, however, is the fact that the article as a definite word has received far more attention in linguistic literature than the affixal article (certainly as far as English and Albanian are concerned). For this reason, the following linguistic description of definiteness is based on (a) the article as a definite word, and (b) mostly the situation in English.

1.2.2 Linguistic conceptualization of definiteness

The linguistic tradition of research into definiteness (specifically the use of articles), is sometimes subdivided into two main (interrelated) approaches, (descriptive) grammatical and pragmatic (and marginally a third one, generative). The development of the linguistic views on definiteness (and indefiniteness) emerges rather well from two outlines offered by Lyons (2003) and Chesterman (1991).

The modern grammatical line of inquiry into the realization of definiteness includes the following names: Christophersen (1939) (e.g. Jespersen/Hislund’s, 1943, account draws on Christophersen’s theory), Yotsukura (1970), Hewson (1972), Hawkins (1978, 1991), Chesterman (1991) and Lyons (2003), and we may also add Krámský (1972) and Kaluža (1981). Of great importance was Gustave Guillaume’s (1919/1975) work for French, which influenced Christophersen, Hewson and Chesterman, who conceive of definiteness in terms of familiarity, redefined by Hawkins as the location theory. The variants of the pragmatic approach to definiteness, already present in Hawkins’s work, are discussed by Lyons in connection with relevance theory (Seperber and Wilson, 1986) and discourse semantics (Irene Heim, 1988). Finally, Lyons’s concept of definiteness is a specific extension of identifiability.

In his study *On Definiteness*, Chesterman (1991, 1-9) starts with a discussion of definiteness at two levels: First of all, he approaches it from the linguistic point of view and asks the semantic, conceptual question: what is definiteness? What does the term definiteness mean? And what does it mean to say that something is definite or not? In linguistic terms, how is definiteness realized, expressed – in other words, how is it encoded? Secondly, from a psycholinguistic point of view: how do we actually recognize that something is definite or not? That is, psycholinguistically speaking, how is definiteness decoded?

Chesterman goes on to claim that definiteness is not only a semantic term, but a term including a number of oppositions that are more basic. On these grounds, the term “definite” and “indefinite” cannot only be seen as polar opposites, but as qualitatively different concepts. He sees definiteness as a composite and more complex, moreover, as a scalar phenomenon. Although Chesterman admits the existence of the category of definiteness even in languages that lack articles, he illustrates its role in English, which is an article-language.

Before going into the details of Chesterman’s and other scholars’ points of view, we may first have a look at the word “article”. According to Krámský (1972, 18) the term *article* is a calque translation of the Latin word *articulus* which in Greek was called *arthron*. It is known as a grammatical term since the 4th century BCE. For the Stoics it was one of the five parts of speech. It was described as an element of a sentence with case endings which distinguished gender and number of nouns. Later, articles and relative pronouns were included in the same class. Dionysius Thrax (170 BCE – 90 BCE), a Hellenistic grammarian, gave a more complex definition of the article when in his *Art of Grammar* he stated that: “the article is a case-forming part of a sentence that precedes or follows nouns. Its simultaneous features are gender, number and case” (see Krámský). In Greek, the articles developed from pronouns and in imitation of them, the Romans decided to call their pronouns, *hic*, *haec* and *hoc*, articles.

The presence or absence of articles in the typological division of languages given by Skalička (2004, 479ff) seem to be one of the key points for the distinction between the first three groups:

- 1) isolating type
- 2) inflectional type
- 3) agglutinative type
- 4) introflexional type
- 5) polysynthetic type

According to Skalička, isolating languages (e.g. Romance and Germanic languages), possess an independent word perceived as an article, definite or indefinite. The inflectional type (e.g. the Slavic languages), on the other hand, do not possess articles at all (with the exception of some East Slavonic languages, such as the analytic Bulgarian). And finally, the majority of agglutinative languages (e.g. the Finno-Ugric languages), use articles in postposition, i.e. as suffixes. Skalička, Sgall (1995, and elsewhere) and Popela (2006, 14ff) regard the presence of articles in the form of an independent word within isolating languages as one of the distinctive features (similarly as fixed word order), that place languages in this particular type.

Christopher Lyons (2003), author of the latest linguistic account of definiteness, presents the development of this concept and its essence as follows. His starting point is the **familiarity**

hypothesis (introduced by Christophersen, 1939, and elaborated by Hawkins, 1978, in his location hypothesis), according to which *the* signals that the entity denoted by the noun phrase is familiar to both speaker and hearer, and *a* is used where the speaker does not want to signal such shared familiarity. The thesis, however, has a problem to cover some instances of usage and so a related principle to definiteness is adopted by some authors, **identifiability** (Lyons, pp. 5-6):

The idea is that the use of the definite article directs the hearer to the referent of the noun phrase by signalling that he is in a position to identify it. This view of definiteness does not altogether reject familiarity. Rather, familiarity, where it is present, is what enables the hearer to identify the referent. In such cases the hearer is invited to match the referent of the definite noun phrase with some real-world entity which he knows to exist because he can see it, has heard of it, or infers its existence from something else he has heard.

Lyons notes, however, that although identifiability is a more comprehensive concept than familiarity, it is not always fully convincing and in some cases it seems inadequate. Two more concepts appear to be necessary: (a) **uniqueness**, i.e. the kind of reference signalled by the definite article that there is just one entity satisfying the description used; (b) **inclusiveness** (a term coined by Hawkins, 1978), which means that the reference is to the totality of the objects or mass in the context which satisfy the description. Lyons concludes that since familiarity can be subsumed under identifiability, and uniqueness is merely a special case of inclusiveness, resulting from the singularity of the noun phrase, we are left with two possible accounts of definiteness between which we have to choose: identifiability and inclusiveness. In fact, he notes that there are “some usage types which can only be accounted for by identifiability, some which can only be accounted for by inclusiveness, and some which both theories account for equally well” (p. 13). Unlike Hawkins, who in Lyons’ view (p. 260), opts for the inclusiveness solution, but makes “significant concession” to the traditional criterion of familiarity in his concept of “location” (*the* instructs the hearer to infer which shared set, i.e. the immediate or larger situation or the previous discourse, is intended and **locate** the referent in speaker-hearer shared set), Lyons adopts the identifiability approach.

Lyons’ approach hinges on the distinction between grammatical definiteness and semantic/pragmatic definiteness, and on the concept of grammaticalization. He claims that definiteness *stricto sensu* is a grammatical category on a par with tense, mood, number, gender, etc., not a semantic or pragmatic notion. Referring to the situation in languages “with no definiteness marking”, he argues (p. 278) that definite interpretation “is, as an element of discourse organization, to do with whether or not a referent is familiar or already established in the discourse – thus identifiability rather than inclusiveness. This assumption is bolstered by the observation that demonstratives, which cannot be characterized as inclusive, are invariably treated as definite in

interpretation in in/definiteness effect contexts. Taking this as the clue, let us say that definiteness is the grammaticalization of identifiability.” At the same time, Lyons incorporates the concept of inclusiveness in his approach as well, saying (ibid.) “In languages where identifiability is represented grammatically, this representation is definiteness; and definiteness is likely to express identifiability prototypically. But it is to be expected that there will be other uses of definiteness which do not relate to identifiability – inclusive uses for example.”

The familiarity hypothesis, as was mentioned above, has a long history and goes back to Christophersen (1939). What Christophersen (pp. 72-81) understands by the concept of familiarity is the fact that the word is attached to a certain association with previously acquired knowledge. This previous knowledge concerns only one definite individual and is realised by means of *the*. To make the definition complete, we should add that whatever is familiar is at the same time unambiguous. Moreover, the article *the*, has an association with previous experience, and as such adds special traits to the general meaning of the word. Thus a name accompanied by the definite article is felt to stand for one definite individual, and by its nature to become close to proper names.

The indefinite article *a/an*, on the other hand, does not require previous knowledge and a noun phrase preceded by an indefinite article denotes a single unspecified member of the class.

The idea of familiarity was further developed by Hawkins (1978), who introduced the location theory within a speech-act approach. Hawkins’s analysis of *the*, *a*, and unstressed *some* includes two basic components; one of them pragmatic and the other logical. According to this theory (Hawkins 1978, 167; also Chesterman 1991, 17-19), the speaker using the definite article:

- introduces a referent to the hearer;
- instructs the hearer to locate the referent in same shared set of objects;
- refers to the totality of the objects or mass within this set which satisfy the referring expression.

To make these acts real, a set of conditions should be fulfilled. First of all, it is the set existence condition which presupposes that both the hearer and the speaker share the set of objects that the definite referent (*the* + noun phrase) is located in. Secondly, the set identifiability condition in which the hearer presupposes the set shared by the speaker, either from the utterance or from the previous discourse. Next comes the set membership condition that presumes the existence of the referent in the shared set. Finally, the set composition conditions that first exclude the possible existence of more than one object represented by the definite description in the shared set, and secondly the hearer’s knowledge or inference that the intended object has the property that is used to refer to it in the descriptive predicate.

Hawkins’ treatment of the uses of *the* based on familiarity was taken over as a starting point

by Lyons (2003, 3-5), who likewise distinguishes three types of reference licensing the use of the definite article:

- 1) situational reference
- 2) anaphoric reference
- 3) bridging cross reference or associative use

In situational reference, both the speaker and hearer contribute directly to the familiarity of the referent of the definite noun phrase. This can be achieved in cases where the physical situation is immediate, i.e. visible, or in cases that are not visible, but still understandable as being parts of, e.g. a house (*house – the bathroom*). Sometimes, the relevant situation can be wider, involving the knowledge of a particular country, e.g., *the prime minister*, without the referent having to be personally known either to the speaker, or the hearer; or the situation is the whole world or the definite reference derives from general knowledge, *the moon*.

Anaphoric reference takes place when the referent/s are familiar not from the physical situation, but from the linguistic context, and they have been mentioned before. In general, the referents that appear in the discourse for the first time are preceded by an indefinite article, whereas when mentioned repeatedly, they take the definite article (*I saw an old man – The old man*).

Associative reference can be thought of as a combination of the anaphoric and the general knowledge types. If we know that referent B is associated with referent A introduced into the discourse, we may treat referent B automatically as familiar: *I had to get a taxi – The driver told me*.

As was mentioned above, not all uses of *the* are easily accounted for in terms of familiarity. That is why Lyons and other linguists, in fact, prefer the concept of identifiability. The idea of identifiability is that the definite article before the noun phrase has an identifying function to the hearer. Identifiability does not reject familiarity, rather it is claimed to subsume familiarity.

Christopherson (1939, 50-55) proposes two more concepts connected with the meaning of the articles, the determination theory and the actualization theory. The determination theory basically says that one of the important functions of the article is to determine an object against other objects of the same group. The actualization theory, then, serves as a concept of presentation. The function of the article is, from this viewpoint, seen as a transition from idea to reality in which the article is meant to indicate and actualise the noun it accompanies.

While Christopherson, Hawkins, Krámský, and Chesterman basically deal with the meaning of the article, Yotsukura (1970) adopts a structuralist mode of analysis (see Chesterman 1991, 16-17). The essence of her approach is not to rely so much on the meaning of the articles (with the exception of the concrete vs abstract), but on their compatibility with NP types whose classification

is derived from a corpus. Moreover, she does not restrict herself to a category of articles comprising only *the* and *a*.

First of all, she introduces the unstressed *some* as an article and, on corpus evidence, regards it as the plural equivalent of the article *a*, as in the following examples:

*There is **a** boy there. – There are **some** boys there.*

Secondly, she separates two types of NP that occur with no (visible) article. The first no-article form is known in the literature as the zero article (cf. Quirk et al., 1985) and it is used before indefinite mass and plural nouns, as in *I hate **milk***. The second no-article form, she identified in the corpus, appears for example with singular proper nouns, such as *I love **Paris***. Her point is that these two zero-article forms are different since they behave differently when the NP they determine takes a postmodifying restrictive relative clause. While the NP with the zero article can be extended by a postmodifying restrictive relative clause, the second no-article form does not allow such an extension:

I have milk. – I hate milk that you gave to me.

*I like Paris. – *I like Paris that the French dislike. I like the Paris that the French dislike.*

Yotsukura adds to this distinction that the second type of no-article form is not restricted to singular proper nouns alone, but it can be found with some singular common nouns in certain context as in:

Part is given here.

**Part we have discussed so far is given here.*

The part we have so far discussed is given here

Word has come that the Pope has died.

**Word that came yesterday was that the Pope has died.*

The word that came yesterday was that the Pope has died.

Yotsukura's observation was taken over by Chesterman (1991), who – to make clear that the status of the two “no-article forms” is different – refers to the traditional indefinite form of mass and plural forms as the zero form and to the other type occurring with singular proper nouns as the null form. Following her extension of the category of English articles, Chesterman distinguishes the following types of articles:

- 1) surface articles (comprising *the*, *a* and unstressed *some*)
- 2) two “no” articles:
 - a) zero (indefinite reference with mass and plural nouns)
 - b) null (definite reference, with singular proper nouns and some singular count nouns)

He points out that each of these five terms imposes a distinct meaning on the NP. In this five-

member category of articles, only three are physically realized (*the*, *a* and unstressed *some*) and accordingly called surface articles, and two of them realize the category of definiteness, *the* and null and as such are found in definite descriptions.

Chesterman (1991, 2ff) further claims that definiteness as realized by English articles can be analysed in terms of a matrix of three binary features. The first two are adapted from Hawkins' location theory and the third is derived from Guillaume's analysis between any surface article and no surface article. Here is their division according to Chesterman:

- 1) locability in a shared set (having to do with familiarity)
- 2) inclusiveness (quantity)
- 3) extensivity (abstractness and generality)

Chesterman (pp. 6-9) also tries to examine a number of assumptions about the English articles which are too rarely challenged. The standard theory holds that the distribution of the surface articles is restricted by the class of noun, i.e. only certain nouns accept the given articles. In general, the indefinite article *a* is supposed to occur only with count nouns. If it appears with an uncountable noun (e.g. *a vicious anger*), then its occurrence is regarded as exceptional. Second, neither *a* nor *the* are used with proper nouns, unless for some specific stylistic and other reasons, such as *a second Gaugin*. Third, singular count nouns invariably appear with an article. There are exceptional cases, though, such as e.g. *in bed*, *a girl of good family*, etc.

The point made by him is that we have to be careful while dealing with such exceptions, as despite their specific use, they still represent a productive type. In fact, they are all counter-evidence to the standard rules. Accordingly, Chesterman draws the conclusion that article usage is not always directly linked to a noun class, more precisely to the distinction between count and non-count (the division of nouns into count and non-count goes back to Jespersen, 1924) and supports Guillaume's theory (1919), who claims that given an appropriate context, almost any noun can occur with any article. As certain contexts are, for pragmatic reasons, more frequent than others the combination article + noun should be seen more as a matter of statistics than syntax.

The issue of surface realization has wider implications. An important study on in/definiteness and its realization in different languages all over the world was written by Krámský (1972). The importance of his monograph is not only in the fact that he introduces and describes the approaches of significant linguists up to date, but that it also deals with the problem of definiteness from a typological point of view. It mainly focuses on the fact that the category of in/definiteness is not exclusively restricted to those languages that possess (visible, i.e. surface), articles.

Krámský (1972, 30) defines determinedness (a term he uses for definiteness) as the "fact that classifies nouns according to whether the content expressed by the noun is clear and identifiable in a concrete way or not." In topical utterances, this category is realized in the positive case by

determinedness, in the negative way by indeterminedness.

He introduces a typology of languages based exclusively on the occurrence of the category of in/definiteness (unlike Skalička, Sgall and Popela mentioned above). From this point of view, he divides languages into:

- 1) languages expressing the category of determinedness vs. indeterminedness by means of independent words (meaning articles);
- 2) languages in which one member of the category of determinedness is expressed by an independent word, the other member is proclitic or enclitic;
- 3) languages in which both (or more) members of the category of determinedness vs. indeterminedness are either enclitic or proclitic;
- 4) languages in which the category of determinedness vs. indeterminedness is inherent in the noun itself or in another word category;
- 5) languages in which the category of determinedness vs. indeterminedness is expressed by inflexion;
- 6) languages in which the category of determinedness vs. indeterminedness is expressed by stress or intonation;
- 7) languages without an article.

All these groups are further subdivided into subgroups.

This approach is one of the possible classifications and it has to be said that there are overlaps in the above division as some languages may belong to two or more types. Still Krámský's classification interestingly complements Dryer and Haspelmath's list of in/definiteness markers (see Table 1 above). It is of particular interest that in the typological division of languages and the way they express in/definiteness we can trace one more important feature, and that is the usefulness of the concept of centre and periphery of the language system. As Krámský (1972, 99) further points out, in some languages the expression of the category in question is apparently in the centre of the language system whereas in other languages it is more or less peripheral. Some languages have a tendency to push this category to its very periphery or to make it disappear. The impact the category of in/definiteness has in different languages is not only in the centre/periphery sphere, but also in the relation to the language surface and its core.

As regards the definition of the term determinedness or definiteness in Krámský's monograph, Chesterman (1991, 2-3) points out quite rightly that it raises more questions than answers. He supports his criticism by referring to the circular use of words in the above definition, such as 'clear' as opposed to what?, 'concrete' as opposed to 'abstract'?

Moreover, there are several other issues connected with the central question of definiteness, such as reference. As Chesterman claims, definiteness cannot be restricted to matters of reference

alone. Both, definiteness and reference are difficult to conceive in a simple unitary sense; the terms have a wider scope.

Finally, there is one more aspect that might be arguable, as we already noticed in Chesterman's definition of definiteness. Are the terms in/definiteness really in a privative opposition or do they correlate and interrelate? Is it therefore necessary to present definiteness and indefiniteness as oppositions or as phenomena that correspond to one another? There are no clear answers to these questions yet.

Speaking of the theory of the typological division of languages and the way they express in/definiteness, Krámský (1972, 199) observes that this category in different languages reveals different needs. As it is, people, regardless of the language they speak (with or without the presence of articles), have in mind either certain, definite, therefore already known objects, or, on the other hand, uncertain, indefinite, unknown objects. The language serves as an indispensable means of reflecting the differentiation between these objects in the minds of people. The case of in/definiteness is in Krámský's terms presented as a notional category that should be investigated as the relation of thinking to the ways it is expressed in different languages.

Chesterman (1991, 3) agrees with the point that while article-languages express definiteness through articles, languages lacking articles use a variety of other means. On the other hand, he differs on how these other means work and whether the definiteness they express is identical with that expressed by articles. The question that comes to mind at this point is whether or not the status of definiteness should be conceived as a universal category.

The solution that Lyons (2003, 274-281) proposes to answer Chesterman's objection is the assumption of "semantic/pragmatic definiteness" (or identifiability) widely occurring in languages. In some of them this semantic/pragmatic concept has been grammaticalized and turned into a grammatical category, in others it has remained ungrammaticalized. What Lyons understands by grammaticalization is a diachronic process whereby lexical entities have been reduced into grammatical ones. This semantic reduction goes hand in hand with morphological reduction, so that the word in question develops into a grammatical form or forms, e.g. inflections or possibly free forms, but non-lexical words. Lyons understands grammaticalization in connection with the category of definiteness also synchronically. Accordingly, he uses the term to denote the representation by a grammatical form or forms (and thus with the status of a grammatical category), of some concept of meaning. He concludes that the concept of grammaticalization is a mixture of synchronic and diachronic features that cannot be explained separately (p. 278): "Putting this point in diachronic terms, when identifiability comes to be grammaticalized as definiteness, this category will go on to develop other uses."

As we already know, not all grammatical categories are represented in all languages. Some

languages lack certain grammatical categories that others have. On these grounds, Lyons (2003, 278) defines definiteness as the ‘grammaticalization of what I have informally termed “semantic/pragmatic definiteness”’ in languages that do not have definiteness as an independent grammatical category. What the definition basically says is that many languages have definiteness as, for example, part of pronominal constructions, therefore not directly implemented into a noun phrase. In languages where definiteness is not an element of the grammatical system, we have to do with identifiability, as we need to know whether or not a referent is familiar or already established in the discourse.

In conclusion, this chapter offers a survey of linguistic views on definiteness. While the philosophical viewpoint on the notion of definiteness is summarized rather briefly in 1.1, the linguistic tradition of definition of definiteness is treated in more detail.

First of all, it deals with the conceptualization of “definiteness”. Secondly, it explains the presence or absence of linguistic means that express the category of definiteness. These can be either grammatical or semantic/pragmatic according to the language type. In isolating languages, such as English, the expression of definiteness is very much influenced and determined by the presence of articles. Some authors perceive articles as the prototypical realization of definiteness. On the other hand, some authors object to the division of languages into article-languages and those that lack articles, as we have already seen.

However, the notion of definiteness is associated with identifiability (familiarity) and inclusiveness (uniqueness) which can be illustrated by English, a prototypical article language. The question that comes to mind is whether languages that lack formal articles allow such distinctions as conveyed by articles. They probably do (as suggested by Hewson’s (1972) hypothesis of the emergence of articles as compensation for the loss of noun inflection and the resulting deconcretisation of the noun), but they may not have the same value as within article-languages. There is little doubt, though, that definiteness or identifiability as a general concept is present in every language, regardless of its type. What makes the difference is the fact that in some languages it is established as a grammatical category, whereas in others as a semantic/pragmatic one.

1.2.3 The grammaticalization of definite articles

The semantic pragmatic dimension of article usage is inseparable from the issue of grammaticalization which has cropped up several times in the text. It may, therefore, be useful to recall the current views on the grammaticalization of definite articles. One of the most recent discussions of this topic appears in De Mulder and Carlier (2012), who explore the process on a

cross-linguistic level and conclude that the definite article in most languages can be traced to a weakened demonstrative (while the indefinite article to the numeral 'one') and investigate the morphosyntactic role of noun (phrase) marker in this process.

1.3 The expression of definiteness in Albanian

This chapter provides a brief history of the category of definiteness in Albanian, followed by remarks on articles in postposition in some of the Balkan languages. Moreover, it deals with current accounts of expression of definiteness in Albanian including a survey of the Albanian prepositive element/article and Albanian postpositive article/form.

It finally concludes with a survey of reference grammar accounts of in/definiteness in nouns uses in Albanian.

1.3.1 The development of the category of definiteness in Albanian

Discussion of the development of definiteness in Albanian and its expression cannot be separated from the question of the typological position of Albanian. Articles commonly appear in a number of modern IE languages, especially in Germanic and Romance ones and (besides word order) are considered an essential feature in terms of language typology as already mentioned in 1.2.

In fact, IE languages may be divided according to the type of word order they dispose of into two most prominent categories:

- 1) languages with (generally) fixed word order;
- 2) languages with (relatively) free word order.

The reason for drawing attention to this division is that a claim has been repeatedly made that the degree of fixedness or freedom of word order has indirect bearing on the emergence of the category of in/definiteness in the IE languages, i.e. on the presence of the articles in them. Essentially, in highly inflected languages in which the category of case marks the grammatical function of the noun, word order serves to fulfill other functions than grammatical (e.g. signalling information structure or functional sentence perspective, FSP). Moreover, in this type of languages, case specifies or contextualizes the meaning of the noun therefore articles are not needed to provide additional information. Moreover, the combination of FSP and the case endings presumably endows the nominal elements with in/definiteness. By contrast, in languages in which inflection has been reduced and the function of word order grammaticalized, the uninflected noun has to rely on function words to signal the manner of its integration in context. In other words, free word-order

languages tend to lack special means expressing the grammatical category of in/definiteness as such, whereas fixed word-order languages typically possess elements expressing it. Nonetheless, this equation does not apply entirely, as languages form a cline in terms of inflectedness and accordingly display systems of articles of varying complexity, e.g. from zero- to one- and two-article systems, of a varying degree of obligatoriness, and with different rules of usage, placement, combinatorics, etc.

While English is a representative of analytical languages (the article, if present, is detached from the noun it belongs to and entirely undeclined), the typological position of Albanian from the point of view of the article languages vs case languages is less clear. It has the appearance of a language that is stuck in between the two types. It contains two sets of articles/forms, the preposed and the postposed ones. Whereas the preposed article works more on the basis of a linker (linking a noun to another noun, or to an adjective, numeral and certain pronouns) being in concord with the noun in terms of gender, number, case and in/definiteness, the postposed article seems to be the real marker of in/definiteness, therefore the “real” article. Moreover, among the other categories, the Albanian noun also shows case endings, actually two sets of them, for the definite and the indefinite form of the noun. Being part of the noun, i.e. incorporated into it, in/definiteness and the category of case are inseparable and closely related in Albanian, therefore the language does not easily fit into the article vs. case language division referring to the expression of in/definiteness. Rather than separating these features from one another, Albanian is working in an opposite direction here, i.e. towards the unification of both case and article.

All in all, it seems that both languages overlap in a common point covering the category of in/definiteness. The category of in/definiteness is in both languages mostly expressed by the presence of the in/definite articles.

In English, there are other means of expressing in/definite reference, i.e. other subsets of determiners, such as pronouns (demonstrative, possessive, relative, interrogative, indefinite, etc.), also negative determiners (*no, neither*), numerals, the genitive case or superlatives implying unique reference, etc.

The role of articles as a special tool of expressing in/definiteness, or more specifically the grammatical category of definiteness has an obvious lexical background (the definite article originating from a demonstrative pronoun). Demonstrative pronouns, however, as a part of speech apart from expressing definiteness also express exophoric reference (deixis), e.g. demonstration (pointing out at people, things, etc.), or textual deixis referring to portions of the (con)text. Just as the definiteness of a noun can be expressed by the use of a demonstrative pronoun, the indefiniteness can be effectuated not only by the indefinite article, but also by the use of an indefinite pronoun (or by the use of the numeral *one*). And just like the demonstrative pronoun has

become grammaticalized and started to be perceived as the definite article (e.g. in English), so the numeral *one* has in many languages become grammaticalized and fulfills the role of the indefinite article.

When it comes to linguistic diachrony Albanian scholars sometimes have a tendency to compare the development of Albanian articles to the development of articles in languages geographically close to the area. Albanian historical grammars, especially those by Demiraj (1985) and Mann (1977) pay a great deal of attention to the similarity between Romanian and Albanian articles. In both languages, we encounter articles in both preposition and postposition. However, despite common traces, it has to be said that e.g. prepositive articles in Romanian developed at a relatively late period compared to Albanian. For that matter, it is difficult to establish a direct relationship between the development of prepositive articles in Albanian and Romanian.

As far as the development of postpositive articles is concerned, it is even more difficult to give a clear answer as to whether there is a close relation between Albanian and Romanian. Generally speaking, there are various opinions on how the postpositive articles have developed. Some scholars see them as a Balkan phenomenon and express the view that they originated from a common source (Illyrian, Thracian, Latin, Slavic, etc.). On the other hand, there are also those who believe that postpositive articles developed outside the Balkans. Concerning Albanian, La Piana (1949) placed postpositive articles before the Latin period, whereas Jokl (in Demiraj, 1985) considered them as being part of the Roman period. Pisani (1969) and Gjinari (1972), on the other hand, place them even earlier (Illyrian period).

There is also an ongoing discussion concerning the relative origin of the pre/postposed articles. Overall, there are two basic hypotheses on the chronological development of Albanian articles (Demiraj, 1985). First, Pedersen and other scholars (in Demiraj, 1985) consider the prepositive article to be primary. E. Çabej (1975), on the other hand, claims the postpositive article to have appeared first. Pedersen (1900) is of the opinion that prepositive articles of Albanian nouns arose from a class of adjectives. This thesis is supported by Bokshi (1980), who states that the prepositive article in Albanian developed from the syntagma of the type: *adjective + article + noun*; it first agglutinated to the adjective and later became attached to the noun. This shift had occurred before the 8th century.

Çabej (1975), on the other hand, advances the thesis that postpositive articles in Albanian appeared first. He bases his hypothesis on numerous phonetic and morpho-syntactic arguments. His central argument is that Albanian used to have many more case endings than it has today therefore the article in postposition is a remaining feature of the ancient noun declension. For that matter, it does not only show the category of in/definiteness, but it has other accumulated functions (e.g. gender, number, etc.), as already mentioned above. As Stuart E. Mann (1977) puts it, in IE

languages nouns were distinguished by their stem-vowels, according to which they formed the following singular and plural cases: nominative, accusative, genitive, possessive, dative, instrumental, ablative and locative. Noun endings have in some languages been replaced by inflections of a pronominal type. As for Albanian, only little of the IE noun system has remained present in the language. Of the four existing cases, the nominative and accusative, singular and plural, are alike as well as the genitive and dative (singular and plural). The suffixed article, a feature shared by Romanian, Bulgarian, and the Scandinavian languages, furnishes Albanian with a special feature that gives the Albanian noun a distinct paradigm.

A very distinctive view on article development in Albanian is introduced by E. Riza (19). Riza first backed the hypothesis that the prepositive article was older than the postpositive one. Later on, though, the same scholar expressed the opinion that both articles originated “at the same ancient period from two respective syntaxes of the same anaphoric demonstrative”. To support this, he mentions also the Scandinavian languages – and as a relic of the prepositive definite articles he cites the word group *të mi vëllazën* (*brothers of mine*).

Even though, the chronology of articles in Albanian has not been resolved yet and Riza's hesitation only reinforces the uncertainties, the idea that both articles have entered the language at the same time is generally thought to be absolutely out of the question and as such should be ruled out (Demiraj, 1985).

1.3.2 Remarks on articles in postposition in some of the Balkan languages

Despite the fact that this work does not deal with language diachrony of the postposed article in Albanian, we find it necessary to introduce some of the theories of the formation of the Albanian article as presented in the Albanian linguistic sources.

The end position of the article proper in Albanian nouns is not unique within the Balkan language area (sprachbund). In his monograph, *Prapavendosja e nyjës në gjuhët ballkanike – The Postposition of Articles in Balkan Languages*, Besim Bokshi (1984), with reference to others, e.g. Georgiev, Miletić and Sh. Demiraj, maintains that within the Balkan languages, Bulgarian, Romanian and Albanian dispose of what he calls a postposed article.

The finding is not new and it dates from 1829, when Kopitar (1829) claims that within the Balkans, there exists “a linguistic union” with common elements from Bulgarian, Romanian and Albanian; one of these features being the definite postposed article.

As Bokshi adds further, the scholar to indicate a certain similarity between the postposed

article in these Balkan languages was the Bulgarian linguist V. I. Georgiev. Georgiev classifies the formation of the postposed article as one of the most complicated linguistic issues within the Balkan languages, which despite its peculiarity has not been given much attention.

The common features within the Balkan languages were discussed later by Miklosich in 1862 who similarly to Kopitar supports the thesis of a common linguistic union within the Balkan territory.

Georgiev (1966) comes up with many theories on the origins of the postposed article in the Balkan languages. According to Bokshi (pp. 41ff) some linguists like Jordan, Manoliu, and others, believe that the postposition of the definite article in the Balkan languages is a result of the old article in Greek, which through translations and text transcriptions entered the Romance languages and from there affected some of the Balkan languages.

Other researchers like Miletic (1889) see the postposition of the definite article as an influence of Macedonian and Bulgarian that has origins in Balto-Slavic. Miletic sees the development and the presence of the postposed article in Bulgarian as a continuation of the adjectival development in the Lithuanian-Slavic period. He supports the hypothesis that the postposed article is of Slavic influence and as he points out, there is evidence in some Russian dialects, in which the postposed article is identical to the one in Bulgarian. He goes even further when he claims that the existence of the postposed definite article in Bulgarian could not have developed through the influence of any other neighbor language, but it is a genuine Bulgarian, albeit Slavic feature. Moreover, the article in Russian and Bulgarian has developed side by side as a common feature. He also tries to expand this theory and include the article in Polish as of Slavic origin, always highlighting that the most elaborate and advanced is the postposed article in Bulgarian.

Miletic's viewpoint was upheld by other scholars and so, for example, B. Conev (1940) complements the theory by introducing the idea that the postposition of the article in Romanian is a result of the influence of Bulgarian. On the other hand, though, Conev claims that the presence of the preposed article in Romanian is of earlier origin than the one in Bulgarian. The only difference that Bulgarian made in the development is the influence it has on changing the position of the preposed article into the postposed article in Romanian.

In his book *Grammaire comparée des langues slaves* (1950-1977), A. Vaillant sees the creation of the postposed article in Bulgarian and Macedonian as a Balkanic feature. According to Vaillant, the creation of the article in the languages of the area was influenced by Greek and Romanian, the shift in the position, where the preposed article moved to the back, albeit became postposed was nevertheless a Slavic feature that was introduced into Romanian.

On a more nationalistic note, G. Svane (in Bokshi, 1984, 44) upholds the theory that within the South Slavic languages, the creation of the definite article did not receive any outer impulse,

therefore it is solely an inner feature. This viewpoint antagonizes both above presented theories, i.e. the definite postposed article in South Slavic languages could have been influenced by Old Church Slavonic or that it could have developed under the Greek-Latin-Romanian.

In 1960 R.G. Piotrovskij tried to back the theory that the postposed article appeared first in Bulgarian and Macedonian and through these two languages entered Romanian. According to Piotrovskij (1960) the article in Romanian was created much later than in other Romance languages; Romanian being seen as a rustic, conservative language in the family group. In addition to that, the article in Bulgarian and Macedonian was most likely created in the 10th -11th century and it entered Romanian at approximately the same time. As for Albanian, he upholds the thesis that the appearance of the postposed definite article took place three centuries later, i.e. during 13th -14th century. Most likely the influential factors entered Albanian via a Balkan Slavic language, i.e. Bulgarian or Macedonian, or a Romance-Balkan language.

On the other hand, Piotrovskij argues that the postposed article in Albanian could have resulted from a solely Balkan substrate, as in Albanian, we have both, preposed and postposed article elements. Moreover, Greek unlike Romanian, could have not been of influence here either, as the Greek determiners appear in preposition and Latin is also out of the question as the articles were preposed here, too.

1.3.3 Current accounts of the expression of definiteness in Albanian

From the perspective of language synchrony, it has to be mentioned that Albanian is still struggling with the very definition of the word “article”. There is an urgent need for the unification of terminology when it comes to both the category of in/definiteness and the markers of in/definiteness as such. Shaban Demiraj (1972) argues that in a majority of Albanian grammars the category of definiteness is not perceived as a grammatical category at all (unlike gender, number, case). He claims (1972, 25-66) that in Albanian we have to distinguish between two different perceptions of or two different approaches to definiteness.

The first approach (*e pa/shquara-the in/definite*) according to Demiraj examines the noun in terms of the presence or absence of a definite form. As will be explained later the definite form (ultimately signalling familiarity) is indicated by the postpositive article rather than the preposed article. The second approach (*e pa/caktuara = the marked/unmarked*) identifies the noun in terms of its in/definite use. In other words, a noun marked by a postpositive definite article is seen as being known or familiar to (or, to use Lyons’s term, identifiable by) both speaker and hearer in the discourse. An unmarked noun, on the other hand, is new/unknown in an utterance or context. When

a noun is *i caktuar/*marked, it does not only combine with the definite article, but can also appear in combination with another definite marker or determiner (e.g. a possessive or demonstrative pronoun).

Despite the overall tendency of Albanian grammars (Camaj, Domi et al., etc.) to conceive the category of in/definiteness in terms of *e pa/shquara* (a formal morphological distinction), Demiraj proposes that the grammatical category of in/definiteness should be primarily viewed in terms of the semantic opposition *i pa/caktuar*. He also adds that the terms *i pa/caktuar* (contextually identifiable) and *i pa/shquar* (formally marked) do not exclude one another, but complement one another in the sense that the latter represents the semantic aspect and the former stands for a formal opposition only. However, a third term is possibly needed to incorporate the combination of these two concepts of in/definiteness.

Before discussing this topic, we should first turn to two important factors connected to articles in Albanian:

- 1) their position (they can be post- or preposed to the noun they determine);
- 2) the expression of in/definiteness.

According to Jani Thomai (2006, 45f), Mahir Domi et al. (2002, 120ff), Martin Camaj (1984, 15ff), Newmark et al. (1982, 168ff) and others, articles in Albanian appear in preposition and in postposition. They can accompany nouns, adjectives, some pronouns and ordinal numerals.

1.3.3.1 Albanian prepositive article/element

Even though, this work considers the postposed article the real marker of definiteness in Albanian, we could not omit the existence of the preposed element without saying a few words on the matter. After a long discussion in 1.3 dealing with how old the Albanian preposed article is and whether it came into being or not before the preposed form, in his monograph *Prapavendosja e nyjës në gjuhët ballkanike*, Bokshi gives a short description of the preposed article in Albanian.

According to Riza (1965), there is a theory that shows that the postposed element/article preceding the Albanian adjective is a redundant feature that led to the conversion (in this case the substantivization of the adjectives), he also believes that old Albanian had only articles in preposition. He backs up this theory by the following arguments:

1. The presence of the preposed article with Albanian adjectives.

Albanian *i miri* (masc., sg., adj.) – *the good* can be seen as: ***I mirI***, which already contained in itself (as a preposed element) the identical postposed article. The Albanian linguist believed that adjectives in old Albanian were previously unaccompanied by a postposed article, this came only

later in the language as an additional feature, necessary to the substantivization.

2. Cases where the preposed article has not lost its definite value, which are:

a) the preposed article in front of numerals in cases they are used as nouns, as in:

kanë ardhur të tre/ the three of them came

b) the article that appears in front of the non-definite pronouns, such as:

gjithë, të gjithë/all, të tërë (masc. pl.), të tëra (fem., pl.)/whole

All the above mentioned pronouns can appear with a preposed article, but could not be accompanied with a postposed element

3. Cases like *të mi vëllazën/ the brothers of mine, të tu motra/ the sisters of yours, etc., in* which according to Riza the preposed element does not belong to the adjective *mi, tu/mine, yours,* but it belongs to the nouns, *vëllazën, motra/brothers, sisters.* Apparently, the function of the preposed article here is to determine the nouns from the front. In this group, we could also include the so-called kinship terms that appeared in both Prifti&Hubbard and Newmark, comprising nouns such as: *i biri, e bija, të bijtë* which could transcribe into:

i biri – biri i tij, i saj, i tyre, etc./his-her-their son – the son of his-hers-theirs

e bija – bija e tij, e saj, e tyre, etc./his-her-their daughter – the daughter of his-hers-theirs

From a morphological, but also historical viewpoint, the preposed elements *i, e, të* do all belong to the noun, and not to the adjective.

An interesting phenomenon in Albanian is the appearance of preposed articles with the days of the week: *e hënë/Monday, e martë/Tuesday, e mërkurë/Wednesday, e enjte/Thursday, e premte/Friday, e shtunë/Saturday, e diel/Sunday.*

From a grammatical viewpoint, all the days are in fact adjectives, e.i. they represent ellipses, where the word *day/ditë* was omitted, as in *ditë e hënë – (day of) Monday, ditë e martë – (day of) Tuesday, ditë e diel – (day of) Sunday, etc.*

The article *e* is the only remains of the former noun *ditë/day*; it agrees with the noun in number (sg.) and gender (fem.).

G. Meyer (1892) very rightly claims that the following names: *e martë/Tuesday, e mërkurë/Wednesday, e shtunë/Saturday* are all names borrowed from Latin. He sees *e diel/Sunday, e hënë/Monday*, like names that were translated from Latin, as it is the case in English, too, after all. The names *e enjte/Thursday, e premte/Friday* remain, though, inexplicable.

If we decide to exclude from the group the two days, the origin of which, seems to be unclear, the remaining five show clearly that at some point in the past they were grammatically nouns with different genders, which by the way, is the case in Latin, too. Therefore, we have (*Mars, Martis, Mercurius, Diell, Hënë, Saturnus*). Given the fact that they were of different gender and therefore would in accordance require a preposed article that would correspond with their gender, the fact that

all the days of the week in Albanian appear with a preposed *e* (sg., fem.), simply means that this preposed element is not a belonging article. The fact that it appears to be a corresponding article happens only because the combination of the word *ditë* (fem., indef.) + the preposed element of the genitive case results into the preposed *e*. Actually, as Pedersen (1900) pointed very rightly, it is very probable that the days of the week in Albanian are genitives, i.e. nouns in genitive case.

The following tables show clearly what effect the combination of the genitive case with other cases has on the form of the preposed article/element. The genitive preposed elements/articles in Albanian are: *i, e, të, së*; their form changes and depends on the gender, number in/definiteness and case of the noun after which the article/element does appear:

Table 2: The genitive preceded by the nominative

Masc.	Sg.	Indef. një student	i një kolegji
	Pl.	Def.. studentin	e kolegjit
Fem.	Sg.	Indef. një studente	e një shkolle
	Pl.	Def. studentja	e shkollës
		Indef. ca studentë	të ca kolegjeve
		Def.. studentët	e kolegjeve
		Indef. ca studente	të ca shkollave
		Def. studentet	e shkollave

Table 3: The genitive preceded by the accusative

Masc.	Sg.	Indef. një student	të një kolegji
	Pl.	Def. studentin	e kolegjit
Fem.	Sg.	Indef. një studente	të një shkolle
	Pl.	Def. studenten	e shkollës
		Indef. ca studentë	të ca shkollave
		Def. studentët	e shkollave

Table 4: The genitive preceded by the genitive/dative/ablative

Masc.	Sg.	Indef. (një) studenti	të një kolegji
	Pl.	Def. studentit	të kolegjit
Fem.	Sg.	Indef. një studenteje	të një shkolle
	Pl.	Def. studentes	së shkollës
		Indef. (ca) studentëve/sh	të ca kolegjeve
		Def. studentëve	të kolegjeve
		Indef. ca studenteve/sh	të shkollave
		Def. studenteve	të shkollave

Articles in preposition are detached from the word they specify and their uses can basically be

divided into two major groups: The first group of preposed article distinguishes grammatical categories from one another, whereas the second group uses the article in preposition to express possessiveness.

Group 1: Articles in preposition included in Group 1 help to distinguish lexical-grammatical categories, e.g. adverbs from adjectives (*mirë-well vs i/e mirë-good*), they express the grammatical opposition of gender (*i* for masculine, *e* for feminine), number, and case. The literature does not mention any impact on the category of in/definiteness as such. They are divided into the following subgroups: adjectival articles, articles appearing only with some pronouns, articles appearing only with some nouns and articles accompanying ordinal numerals,

a) **Adjectival articles** [*i(masc.sg.), e(f.sg.), të(masc.pl.), së(fem.pl.)*]

The first case to be examined is the combination of the indefinite noun accompanied by an adjective with an article, first for the masculine and then for the feminine gender.

Masculine nouns:

1a. Indefinite noun + adjective with article

Table 5: Masculine indefinite noun + adjective with article

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	djalë i mirë	djem të mirë
genitive	i.....djali të mirë	i djemve të mirë
dative, ablative	djali të mirë	djemve të mirë
accusative	djalë të mirë	djem të mirë

2a. Definite noun + adjective with article

Table 6: Masculine definite noun + adjective with article

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	djali i mirë	djemtë e mirë
genitive	i.....djalit të mirë	i djemve të mirë
dative, ablative	djalit të mirë	djemve të mirë
accusative	djalin e mirë	djemtë e mirë

Feminine nouns:

3a. Indefinite noun + adjective with article

Table 7: Feminine indefinite noun + adjective with article

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	vajzë e mirë	vajza të mira
genitive	i.....vajze të mirë	ivajzave të mira
dative, ablative	vajze të mirë	vajzave të mira
accusative	vajzë të mirë	vajza të mira

4a. Definite noun + adjective with article

Table 8: Feminine definite noun + adjective with article

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	vajza e mirë	vajzat e mira
genitive	i.....vajzës së mirë	ivajzave të mira
dative, ablative	vajzës së mirë	vajzave të mira
accusative	vajzën e mirë	vajzat e mira

According to *Gramatika e gjuhës shqipe* (Domi et al., 2002, 153-214), these articles always stand in between a noun and an adjective, therefore their form depends on various factors: gender, case and number of the directing noun. Throughout the entire large chapter dedicated to the grammatical categories in Domi et al. we encounter gender, number, case and the comparison of adjectives. The category of in/definiteness is not mentioned at all. The form of the preposed element (the one that stands between the noun and the dependent adjective), though, also varies according to whether the noun is definite or indefinite as it is shown below. This observation is valid for the nouns + adjectives in the following cases: plural nominatives for both genders, as in:

djem të mirë (masc., pl., indef.) x djemtë e mirë (masc, pl., def.)

and

vajza të mira (fem., pl., indef.) x vajzat e mira (fem., pl., def.);

singular and plural accusative for both genders, as in:

djalë të mirë (masc., sg., indef.) x djalin e mirë (masc., sg., def.)

djem të mirë (masc., pl., indef.) x djemtë e mirë (masc., pl., def.)

and

vajzë e mirë (fem., sg., indef.) x vajzën e mirë (fem., sg., def.)

vajza të mira (fem., pl., indef.) x vajzat e mira (fem., pl., def.);

singular genitive for feminine nouns, as in:

i...një vajze të mirë x i vajzës së mirë

Last, the change of the preposed element also shows up in the singular dative and the ablative of feminine nouns, as in:

vajze të mirë (fem., sg., indef.) x vajzës së mirë (fem.,sg., def.)

The question is whether or not the change of the preposed element can in the cases described above be viewed as a marker of definiteness or indefiniteness. The argument that would go against is without a doubt the fact that the change of the preposed element does not apply to the entire scale of definite/indefinite noun. Moreover, the changes that take place in the preposed element of the Albanian adjectives depend on other grammatical categories, case, gender, number as we mention above. The strongest influence seems to be the category of case, despite a strong influence of case syncretism.

All in all, we are of the opinion that despite the fact that other elements modify the form of the preposed element in Albanian adjectives, the fact that the adjectival article changes in the cases shown above according to whether or not the noun is definite, leads to the conclusion that this preposed element/article partially shows in/definiteness. On the other hand, though, the real marker of the in/definiteness stands on the postposed element/article to the noun, the preposed adjectival article always bends/modifies accordingly.

b) **Articles appearing only with some pronouns** (*i cili (masc.sg.)/e cila (fem.sg.)*) – *which, i/e saj – his, her/s, të tyre-their/s,...*)

Pronouns that in Albanian appear with a preposed article are of multiple kinds. Some of them appear articleless in most of the grammatical cases, except for the genitive (e.g. the interrogative pronouns), whereas others carry the preposed article all the way through the declension system (e.g. relative pronouns). Possessive pronouns, on the other hand, show more resemblance with the adjectives in the fact that they can either appear with a preposed article or not (see below).

Interrogative pronouns *cili/cila - which, kush-who* appear throughout their declension without a preposed element with the exception of the genitive case, which is not a surprise as we already know that there is a preposed genitival element also with nouns in Albanian, e.g. *shtëpia e Petrit – Petrit' s house*. Rather than a designator of definiteness, the preposed element is in this perspective a case marker, that of the genitive.

Table 9: Declension of the *kush-who* pronoun

Case / Number	Singular
nominative	kush
genitive	i kujt
dative, ablative	kujt
accusative	kë

Table 10: Declension of the *cili-who* masculine pronoun

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	cili	Cilët
genitive	i cilit	i cilëve
dative, ablative	cilit	cilëve
accusative	cilin	Cilët

Table 11: Declension of the *cila -who* feminine pronoun

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	cila	cilat
genitive	i cilës	i cilave
dative, ablative	cilës	cilave
accusative	cilën	cilat

Another set of pronouns with preposed articles are the relative pronouns *i cili/e cila – the one who/which*, where the article appears all the way through their declension, both in singular and plural as shown below.

Compared to the articleless *cili/cila* they form a plural and they also undergo a very similar declension process as the adjectives with a preposed element as shown above. This is also given because of a very similar construction these pronouns share with adjectives in Albanian, i.e. a preposed element/article (marking gender, case, number) + the adjective/pronoun itself the ending of which shows the gender, compare:

i mirë (adj., masc., sg.)/e mira (adj., fem., sg.) - good

vs. *i cili/ e cila*

i cili – masculine

Table 12: Declension of the *i cili-the one who* masculine pronoun

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	i cili	të cilët
genitive	i të cilit	i të cilëve
dative, ablative	të cilit	të cilëve
accusative	të cilin	të cilët

Table 13: Declension of the *e cila-the one who* feminine pronoun

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	e cila	të cilat
genitive	i së cilës	i të cilave
dative, ablative	së cilës	të cilave
accusative	të cilën	të cilat

Possessive pronouns

As already mentioned above, the possessive pronouns in Albanian can (similarly to adjectives) be divided into two groups. The first group consists of those who appear with a preposed article/element, and the second group of those who do not.

The first and the second person do both appear without a preposed article/element in singular in both genders, feminine and masculine. The plural is, on the other hand, a mixture of forms with and without preposed elements. The presence or the absence of the element in preposition is not motivated by in/definiteness, though, it might be a feature attached to number, which would explain why the preposed element combines with the plural and not with the singular.

Table 14: Declension of possessive pronouns – first person

First person			
Singular		plural	
M	F	M	F
im ynë	ime jonë	e mi tanë	e mia tona

Table 15: Declension of possessive pronouns – second person

Second person			
singular		plural	
M	F	M	F
yt juaj	jote juaj	e tu tuaj	e tua tuaja

Third person of the Albanian possessive pronoun, on the other hand, appears with a preposed element throughout its declension of the singular and the plural in both genders. The modification of the article is in this situation due to the case declension.

Table 16: Declension of possessive pronouns – third person

Third person							
singular				Plural			
M		F		M		F	
i tij		e tij		e tij		të tij	
i saj	i vet	e saj	e vet	e saj		të saj	
i tyre		e tyre		e tyre		të tyre	
				e vet	e veta		

- c) **Articles appearing only with some nouns** (especially converted nouns, signalling their “nounness”) (*i sëmuri - the sick (masc.sg)*, *e hënë-Monday*, *të menduarit-thinking*, etc.)

These were discussed in great detail at the beginning of the chapter.

- d) **Articles accompanying ordinal numerals**, such as *i pari (masc., sg.)*, *e para (fem., sg.) - the first*

Numerals in Albanian behave like adjectives with a preposed article.

Masculine nouns:

1d. Indefinite noun + numeral

Table 17: Masculine indefinite noun + ordinal numeral

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	djalë i parë	djem të parë
genitive	i.....djali të parë	i djemve të parë
dative, ablative	djali të parë	djemve të parë
accusative	djalë të parë	djem të parë

2d. Definite noun + numeral

Table 18: Masculine definite noun + ordinal numeral

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	djali i parë	djemtë e parë
genitive	i.....djalit të parë	i djemve të parë
dative, ablative	djalit të parë	djemve të parë
accusative	djalin e parë	djemtë e parë

Feminine nouns:

3d. Indefinite noun + numeral

Table 19: Feminine indefinite noun + ordinal numeral

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	vajzë e parë	vajza të para
genitive	i.....vajze të parë	ivajzave të para
dative, ablative	vajze të parë	vajzave të para
accusative	vajzë të parë	vajza të para

4d. Definite noun + numeral

Table 20: Feminine definite noun + ordinal numeral

Case / Number	Singular	Plural
nominative	vajza e parë	vajzat e para
genitive	i.....vajzës së parë	ivajzave të para
dative, ablative	vajzës së parë	vajzave të para
accusative	vajzën e parë	vajzat e para

Similarly to the preposed article of adjectives, the preposed element in Albanian numerals always stands in between the noun and the numeral that is why the modification of the preposed element depends on various factors: gender, case and number of the directing noun. Domi & al. (2002, 203-214) mention that numerals in Albanian have exactly the same grammatical categories the Albanian adjectives have (except for the category of comparison), which are: gender, number, case. Again, the category of in/definiteness is not mentioned at all. The form of the preposed element (the one that stands between the noun and the dependent numeral), though, also varies according to whether the noun is definite or indefinite as it is shown in the cases below. As it was already the case for the adjectives, this observation is valid for the nouns + numerals in the following cases: plural nominatives for both genders, as in:

djem të parë (masc., pl., indef.) x djemtë e parë (masc, pl., def.)

and

vajza të para (fem., pl., indef.) x vajzat e para (fem., pl., def.);

singular and plural accusative for both genders, as in:

djalë të parë (masc., sg., indef.) x djalin e parë (masc., sg., def.)

djem të parë (masc., pl., indef.) x djemtë e parë (masc., pl., def.)

and

vajzë e parë (fem., sg., indef.) x vajzën e parë (fem., sg., def.)

vajza të para (fem., pl., indef.) x vajzat e para (fem., pl., def.);

singular genitive for feminine nouns, as in:

i...një vajze të parë x i vajzës së parë

As it was the case with adjectives, the change of the preposed element also shows up in the singular dative and the ablative of feminine nouns, as in:

vajze të parë (fem., sg., indef.) x vajzës së parë (fem.,sg., def.)

Similarly to the case of the preposed element in Albanian adjectives, we are of the opinion that despite the fact that other elements modify the form of the preposed element in Albanian numerals, the fact that the article of numerals changes in the cases shown above according to whether or not the noun is definite, leads to the conclusion that this preposed element/article partially shows in/definiteness. On the other hand, though, the real marker of the in/definiteness stands on the postposed element/article to the noun, the preposed article of numerals always bends/modifies accordingly.

Within Albanian numerals that appear with a preposed element/article, there are two more cases that deserve further discussion.

First, it is the presence of the preposed article in cardinal numerals that does not happen on a regular basis. According to Domi et al. (2002, 210-211), the cardinal numerals in Albanian can be used with the preposed article only in cases in which they express a summarizing/including amount. The preposed element can appear with numeral two and the following up numbers. They appear with a declined form of the article *i/e*, which is *të*. This form is common for the genitive, dative, etc. cases of the adjectives and/or certain pronouns, ordinal numerals, as is shown in the tables above.

In a particular sense of inclusion, we also encounter in Albanian the particle *që/that*, as in:

që të dy (masc.), dyja (fem.) - that the both of them

që të tre/tria – that the three of them

Another case in which the Albanian numerals appear with a preposed article/element, are the fractions. By definition they do not fully belong to the system of numerals, nonetheless, their ability to count parts of a whole lists them within the chapter on Albanian numerals (Domi et al., 212).

In Albanian, the structure of fractions is as follows: a whole number/cardinal numeral with a numeral adjective in feminine. The numeral is preceded by a preposed article/form. Since their second element is an adjective, they show in their construction the category of gender and case. The category of number is present in the first element (the ordinal numeral), in which the fractions with number *one/një* in their first part are singular and all the others, therefore, plural. It also has to be mentioned that the fractions in Albanian only appear in the feminine gender.

The singular

1/4 – one fourth, 1/10 – one tenth

nom. *një e katërta, një e dhjeta*

gen. *i një të katërtës, i një të dhjetës*

dat., abl. *një të katërtës, një të dhjetës*

acc. *një të katërtën, një të dhjetën*

The plural

2/4, 3/8

nom., acc., *dy të katërtat, tri të tetat*

gen., *i dy të katërtave, i tri të tetave*

dat., abl. *dy të katërtave, tri të tetave*

Group 2 of preposed article uses? subsumes:

- a) articles appearing with nouns in the genitive (*i djalit – of the son/son's, e vajzës, të malit – of the daughter/daughter's, së fushës – of the field, etc.*) that express the grammatical category of in/definiteness (*trajta e pa/shquar* in Albanian)
- b) the so-called *nyja pronore* or the possessive article, i.e. the article denoting kinship terms, also possessiveness (*i ati – his/her father, e ëma = ëma e tij/ e saj – his/her mother...*), apart from expressing grammatical functions (gender, number, etc.), is also used in the possessive sense, which means that it also has a lexical meaning. Spencer (2007) lists these special cases in the section called “Exceptions” and argues that their lexical meaning is based on the notion of possessiveness or belonging showing thus the owner, even in an opaque way (the article accompanying kinship terms does not tell us anything about the gender of the possessor, as it agrees in gender with the noun being possessed). The possessor is therefore known mostly from the context.

With the exception of 2b), it seems that the rest of what in the literature is presented as a preposition article does not really correspond to the properties of an article in terms of expressing

in/definiteness. Uses 1a)-d) and 2a) are characterized by their linkage to the noun, i.e. rather than an article-determiner, the element called a preposed article has every appearance of being a free grammatical morpheme, a particle (co-)marking some of the grammatical categories. These preposed elements agree with the noun in gender, number and possibly case as well, but do not really mark definiteness as such. A very good example of the claim above is the genitive case that in many inflectional groups has an identical case ending with the dative, the only contrasting feature between the two cases being the preposed element (article). In other words, the only feature distinguishing the genitive from the dative in Albanian is the preposed element.

A completely different situation is found with the preposed word *një*. Albanian has a special detached word *një* preceding only the noun for what in English can be translated by the indefinite article *a/an*. In fact, this word is identical (pronounced and written) with the numeral *one* in Albanian. It is also declinable and in agreement with the head noun.

Unlike the numeral, though, it has its own word stress. According to Newmark et al. (1982, 168f) this indefinite article can be also replaced by other determiners, such as *ndonjë* – *some, any, a certain; ca-some, several; njëfarë- a certain, sort of a; disa-some, several*. It is interesting to note that Albanian grammars do not regard the indefinite article *një* as a significant marker of indefiniteness in Albanian. What counts as more important is the indefinite noun form, or in Newmark's terminology the INDEFINITE case forms of nouns with special endings. Nevertheless, the indefinite detached article *një* is important in Albanian in the following cases, some of which include a combination with the postposed article:

- a) when it accompanies a noun mentioned for the first time in a particular context; for that matter, the noun is yet unknown to the audience, as in:

Shkova në dyqan dhe bleva një laps dhe një fletore – I went to a shop and bought a pencil and a notebook.

- b) when a noun without an identified referent appears as subject or object (direct or indirect) of a verb, (in the genitive case), modifier or appositive in a nominal phrase, or as an object of one of the following locative prepositions: *në- in, nëpër-among, mbi-on, nën-under*.

Petriti loz në një amfiteatr. – Petrit is playing in an amphitheatre.

The removal of the article *një* after the above prepositions would cause the following noun to acquire a definite generic meaning.

Compare: *hipi mbi një çati vs hipi mbi çati.*

he climbed on a roof vs he climbed on (the) roof.

- c) the indefinite noun preceded by the article *një* is used predicatively only when followed by a modifier:

Ai ishte një djalë i mirë. – He was a good boy.

d) when the noun is followed by a possessive pronoun, the article *një* may precede a noun with a postpositive article to indicate that the noun is semantically definite (especially in the constructions of the type *a friend of mine* rather than *my friend*):

E mbështolla fëmijën me pelena, e futa nën gunë dhe e shpura në një stan të një miku im çoban.
– *I wrapped up the child in baby linen, put him under my cloak and took him over to a shepherd friend of mine at a mountain sheepfold.*

The combination of *një* and the definite inflection (postpositive definite article) in the noun could perhaps be explained by analogy with the English article system as indefinite specific reference (see Dušková, 1988, 72), i.e. the referent (*a shepherd friend*) is not identified/identifiable in the context but the speaker has a specific person in mind.

e) the article *një* may also be used before a noun with a generic meaning to represent the referent of the noun as an indefinite aggregate consisting of individuals considered together by virtue of their common traits:

Ata e kuptojnë se sa mund të marrë me vete një libër i mirë, por edhe ç’dëm mund të bëjë një libër i keq. - *They understand how many adherents a good book can make, but also the harm that a bad book can do.*

As is clear from the above, preposed Albanian articles are detached from the part of speech they determine, and apart from article *një* do not really work as markers of in/definiteness. Yet it is not clear whether they can be treated as separate words or not. Thomai supports the thesis rejecting the preposed article having the status of a separate word. The explanation he offers (Thomai, 46) is mostly based on the argument of seeing the articles in preposition as “particles that do not have a lexical meaning of their own and do function in the language as word distinguishers through their grammatical impact”. From this point of view, they behave as any other grammatical formant, such as e.g. “s” showing the plural of nouns in English. The question that arises here is whether this explanation is sufficient and acceptable. The structuralists define the word as a device that in a text is distinguished by the presence of spaces, which is the case of the Albanian article in preposition.

Moreover, semantically speaking, words are divided into two large groups: lexical (words with meanings) and functional or grammatical (words that represent certain grammatical categories and relations and have no lexical meaning of their own, such as the English articles). From the point of view of this division, the Albanian preposed articles would definitely belong to the second group and be listed under the heading of function words, i.e. those with grammatical meaning.

One important criterion for recognizing a grammatical category in a language is the obligatoriness of its expression whether by bound or free morphemes. If we apply this to Albanian and accept that the realization of the category of in/definiteness is complementary, i.e. a noun is obligatorily marked either for definite or indefinite reference (and that with the exception of

phraseological cases there are no nouns which are formally unmarked either as definite or indefinite), we may conclude that Albanian indeed possesses the category of in/definiteness. Under normal circumstances Albanian nouns have either definite or indefinite inflection (postposed articles), and these function as the principal means of determination. The role of preposed articles appears to be less important (and less clear), as they can be seen as realizing in/definiteness (in the sense we know it, for instance, from English) in only some specific cases. The question remains, however, which other means are used in Albanian to express definiteness in addition to definite postposed articles. The goal of this study is to find the answer to this question by surveying the uses of the English definite article and by checking to what extent they are matched by the uses of the Albanian definite (postposed) article. We may expect some overlapping uses and some important differences. Hopefully this comparison will result in an overall picture of (definite) article usage in Albanian and thus contribute to a better understanding of the workings of the category of in/definiteness in this language.

1.3.3.2 Albanian definite postpositive article

The postpositive article, as follows from the above, is considered a real marker of definiteness for a majority of grammarians. The presence of the postpositive article does not seem to be unique to Albanian only. As we have seen there are other Balkans languages, such as Romanian, Bulgarian and Macedonian that dispose of the same phenomenon (Camaj, 1984, 10f). The postpositive article in Albanian makes the noun definite in precisely the same way as the English prepositive article "the". Thus every common and proper noun in Albanian has an indefinite form (without article: *zjarr – fire, Petrit – a Peter*) and a definite form signalled by a postposed definite article (*zjarri – the fire, Petriti – the Petrit*).

However, if the status of the preposed article in Albanian is not exactly clear, the situation of the postposed article is even more complicated. There is an ongoing discussion concerning its precise morphological status. Should postposed definite articles be called endings or more broadly suffixes?

The argument that would see them as endings rests on the fact that the postposed articles express only grammatical, but no lexical meaning, and cannot be separated from the word; hence do not have a function as a separate entity. This view is based on the definition of endings, i.e. word-final grammatical (inflectional) suffixes with abstract meaning.

An opposing view to this is that articles in postposition should be conceived more broadly as suffixes. By the word suffix is meant a bound morpheme placed at the end of a word, root or stem,

serving either to form a new word or to function as an inflectional ending, such as *-ness* in *gentleness*, *-ing* in *walking*, or *-s* in *sits* respectively.

Nevertheless, in Albanian the postposed article, which is appended to a noun, pronoun and adjective, denotes not only inflectional information, gender, number and case, but also definiteness (which although a grammatical category is not strictly speaking part of inflection). For that matter, it would be more correct to consider the postposed article a cumulative suffix, i.e. a suffix that shows or cumulates more grammatical categories than one. In other words, inflection and definiteness in Albanian are interrelated.

Accordingly, an important nominal category closely related to the form of the postposed article in Albanian is the category of case. Traditional Albanian grammars distinguish five cases – nominative, accusative, dative, ablative and genitive (Bokshi, 1980) and this analysis is generally carried over into descriptions of Albanian written in other languages (Buchholz and Fielder 1987; Camaj 1969, 1984; Ejntrej 1982; Mann 1932; Newmark 1957; Newmark, Hubbard and Prifti 1982; Zymberi 1991).

Yet the grammatical synopsis in Newmark's (1999) Albanian-English dictionary fails to list the genitive as a separate case and Newmark's (1957) structuralist grammar argues on the basis of distribution that there are only two and a half cases: nominative and accusative, with the genitive (Newmark; 1957, 56) functioning as a marginal case in constructions with the proclitics of concord. He thereby distances himself from an analysis which fully recognises the genitive case. It is clearly important to mention the case category in relation to the postposed article in Albanian, as it affects the forms of both the definite and the indefinite article, much more than the categories of number or gender. In a specific way, the category of definiteness and noun declension in Albanian are inseparable.

The declension system in Albanian basically divides the nouns into four basic classes. We always encounter two parallel sets of declension, one for the nouns with a definite form and one for the nouns with an indefinite form. The terminology may sometimes differ. In various grammars, we may see the terms definite and indefinite nouns or nouns with a definite/indefinite declension, form, etc.

Despite the diverse names of the same phenomenon, the following system is basically what the grammarians have in mind when speaking about the category of in/definiteness in connection with the category of case.

1st declension includes a vast majority of masculine nouns that end with a consonant in the indefinite nominative of the singular; some of them, though, end with a vowel (the patterns for the declension are: *lis-i/oak tree*, *burrë-burri/man*, *ftua-ftoi/quince*, *vëlla-i/brother*, *zë-ri/voice*, *libër-*

libri/book).

Table 21: First declension of Albanian nouns

Case/Number	Indefinite sg	Definite sg.	Indefinite pl.	Definite pl.
Nominative	lis	lis-i	lisa	lisa-t
Genitive	i (një) lis-i	i lis-it	i (disa) lisa -ve	i lisa-ve
Dative	lis	lis-in	lisa-ve	lisa-ve
Accusative	lis	lis-in	lisa	lisa-t
Ablative	lis-i	lis-it	lisa-sh	lisa-ve

2nd declension includes a limited number of masculine nouns that end with a *k*, *h*, *g* or a stressed vowel in the indefinite nominative of the singular (the patterns for the declension are: *mik-u/friend*, *dhé-u/soil*).

Table 22: Second declension of Albanian nouns

Case/Number	Indefinite sg	Definite sg.	Indefinite pl.	Definite pl.
Nominative	mik	mik-u	miq	miq-të
Genitive	i (një) mik-u	i mik-ut	i (disa) miq-ve	i miq-ve
Dative	mik-u	mik-ut	miq-ve	miq-ve
Accusative	mik	mik-un	miq	miq-të
Ablative	mik-u	mik-un	miq-sh	miq-ve

3rd declension subsumes all feminine nouns and some masculine nouns (e.g. *dajë/uncle*, *fëmijë/child*, etc.). The patterns for the declension are: *fushë-a/field*, *dele-delja/sheep*, *motër-motra/sister*, *rrufe-rrufeja/storm*, *e drejtë-a/right*.

Table 23: Third declension of Albanian nouns

Case/Number	Indefinite sg	Definite sg.	Indefinite pl.	Definite pl.
Nominative	fushë	fush-a	fusha	fusha-t
Genitive	i (një) fush-e	i fush-ës	i (disa) fusha-ve	i fusha-ve
Dative	fush-e	fush-ë	fusha-ve	fusha-ve
Accusative	fushë	fush-ën	fusha	fusha-t
Ablative	fush-e	fush-ës	fusha-sh	fusha-ve

4th declension is composed of converted nouns, especially deverbal nouns. These nouns do not show the category of gender really; in Albanian they are called nouns of no gender “*emra të gjinisë asnjëanëse*”. On the other hand, Newmark lists them as neuters.

Generally speaking, their construction is the following: the definite article in preposition + the participle of the verb in question, e.g. verb – *fol* (*talk*); participle – *folur*; (*talking*) noun of no gender: *të folurit/ talking*.

Table 24: Fourth declension of Albanian nouns

Case/Number	Indefinite sg	Definite sg.	Indefinite pl.	Definite pl.
Nominative	të folur	të folur-it	të drejta	të drejta-t
Genitive	i (një) të folur-i	i të folur-it	i (disa) të drejta-ve	i të drejta-ve
Dative	të folur-i	të folur-it	të drejta-ve	të drejta-ve
Accusative	të folur	të folur-it	të drejta	të drejta-t
Ablative	të folur-i	të folur-it	të drejta-sh	të drejta-ve

1.3.4 Reference grammar account of in/definiteness in noun uses in Albanian

Description of the paradigms of the definite and indefinite forms of Albanian nouns gives us an idea of their morphological complexity, but not necessarily of their uses. For the purposes of our study the best source appears to be Newmark, Hubbard and Prifti’s (1982) *Standard Albanian: A Reference Grammar for Students*. Intended as a practical reference book, it provides a relatively detailed comprehensive survey of in/definiteness markers and their functions in Albanian (Chap. 325, 149-159). Even more important, as its main author, Newmark, is a native speaker of English, the treatment of the category of definiteness is noticeably influenced by the Anglophone grammatical tradition. Thus we are told (p. 154) that “Definiteness in Albanian is an inflectional category for nouns that corresponds roughly to the definite-indefinite distinction in English realized through the articles *a* and *the*, although ... there are significant differences between English and Albanian usage.” Description of the category of definiteness is divided into six sections: uses of indefinite articles, uses of indefinite nouns and those of definite nouns subsuming definiteness in common nouns, proper nouns and generics.

The first noticeable thing is the separate treatment of the two markers of indefiniteness. It soon becomes clear, however, that the function of the indefinite article *një* (and even more that of the related determiners *ndonjë* ‘some, any, a certain’, and *njëfarë* ‘a certain, sort of a’) is rather

different from the functions of indefinite declension. To begin with, it is homomorphous with the cardinal numeral ‘one’ and may also function as an indeterminate pronoun (in these functions it is stressed and may be premodified by *vetëm* ‘only’). It does not have a plural form (nor is there an indefinite article for the plural in Albanian), and in all its three functions *një* has the same form for masculine and feminine nouns. Next, it may combine with both indefinite and definite forms of the noun. This is particularly interesting. The fact that the indefinite article *një* may precede a definite noun (followed by a possessive), to indicate that the noun is semantically indefinite (the effect being analogous to *a friend of mine* in contrast to *my friend* in English), and its closeness to its numerical source suggests that the Albanian indefinite article *një* to some extent operates selectively and independently of the in/definiteness signalled by the morphological markers (in/definite endings). Tentatively we might say that while the indefinite article is a lexical-semantic marker of indefiniteness (whose presence is dictated by communicative intentions), in/definite declension is a grammatical marker of in/definiteness. When the indefinite article *një* precedes an indefinite noun it designates an unidentified, single referent, one from a particular class of referents (a kind of), and so not surprisingly, it may also accompany nouns with generic reference. It appears “especially” with first mentions and “customarily” before (indefinite), nouns denoting an unidentified referent in certain syntactic positions (subject, in/direct object, genitive case modifier, appositive and prepositional object after locative prepositions). Its omission after these prepositions results in a definite or generic meaning.

The uses of indefinite nouns are described by Newmark et al. not semantically but by listing the syntactic functions or constructions in which they appear: (1) subject complement (here *një* is used only when the indefinite noun is followed by a modifier): *Gruaja e tij është shqiptare*. ‘His wife is (an) Albanian.’; (2) object complement with the verb *kam* (have): *E kam mik* (literally) ‘I have him (as) friend’; (3) ablative case modifier after an indefinite noun in the nominative or accusative: *vezë pule* ‘chicken egg’; (4) idiomatic verbal constructions of the verb-noun type: *marr frymë* (literally) ‘take breath’ (breathe); (5) idiomatic adverbial constructions (binomials) with the noun repeated: *gur mbi gur* (literally) ‘stone upon stone’ (little by little); (6) as part of negative generic constructions corresponding to the English ‘(there’s) not a, there’s no’: *Mal s’të sheh syri*, ‘There is not (a) mountain in sight’; (7) in partitive function: *pi verë* ‘drink (some) wine’; (8) general object of the verb *kam* (in an existential construction): *ka nënë* ‘he has (or there is) (a) mother’; (9) comparisons (similes): *të veprosht si komunist* ‘behave like (a) communist’; (10) binomials denoting related components of a whole: *atë e bir* ‘father and son’; (11) second constituent of an appositive construction: *gjithë muajin prill* ‘the whole month of April’; (12) after an indefinite determiner, i.e. the indefinite article, cardinal numbers, indefinite quantifier (*shumë* ‘much’, *ndonjë* ‘some, any’), interrogative pronouns (*cili* ‘who’, *c* ‘what’, etc.), but also (third

person) demonstratives (*ky, kjo* ‘this’) and preposed possessives (*im* ‘my’, *yt* ‘your’); (13) complement of certain accusative prepositions (*në* ‘in’, *mbi* ‘on’, *me* ‘with’, *pa* ‘without’, *nën* ‘under’, etc.) when unmodified: *Ju ma vutë mbi krye këtë kurorë* ‘You put this crown on (my) head’;

Introducing the uses of definite common nouns, Newmark et al. (p. 154) observe that, generally speaking, the definite noun denotes a specific, identifiable referent “thought of as distinct from other members of the same class” (p. 155). However, in addition to using the definite noun a specific referent may be denoted by the indefinite form following a demonstrative pronoun, so we have *djali* ‘the boy’, *shkolla* ‘the school’ and *ky djalë* ‘this boy’ and *ajo shkollë* ‘that school’. Unlike with indefinite nouns, the uses of definite nouns are defined in terms of (utterance) context and cotext. Newmark gives seven circumstances eliciting definite reference and so the definite form in the noun: (1) second mention (anaphoric reference); (2) logical definite reference, what Quirk et al. (1985) call associative anaphore (*një autobus > shoferi dhe pasagjerët* – a bus > the driver and the passengers); (3) immediate situation (or situational), reference: *Shikoni inxhenerët, - tha Anseli*. “Look at the engineers”, Anseli said.’; (4) “possessive” reference (the definite noun belongs to someone): *me zgjoni djalin* ‘my (the) boy’; (5) stylistic literary reference (in fact, quasi second mention) – “The writer uses the definite form as a stylistic device to give the impression that the reader is already involved in the situation in the story” (p. 154); (6) unique reference (*dielli* ‘the sun’, *hëna* ‘the moon’, etc.), some multiword expressions are also considered unique: *gjuha shqipe* ‘the Albanian language’, *populli shqiptar* ‘the Albanian people’, *letërsia e vjetër shqipe* ‘(the) old Albanian literature’; (7) definite reference due to qualification (modification). Newmark et al. list five types of qualifiers associated with definite reference: (i) possessives: *shoku im* ‘my (the) friend’; (ii) noun modifiers in the genitive case; (iii) ordinals: *viti i dytë* ‘the second year’, *takimi i parë* ‘the first meeting’; (iv) postposed adjectives in the superlative, or rather the definite form of the noun indicates the adjective is in the superlative (alternatively the superlative may be preposed, in which case, the noun will be indefinite); (v) quantifiers *gjithë* and *tërë*: *gjithë nxënësit* ‘all the pupils’, *tërë bota* ‘the entire world’; (vi) relative clause: *Kapedani që priste populli, erdhi*. ‘The leader that the people were waiting for came’; (8) preposed articles *i, e, të* or *së* functioning as 3rd person possessives standing before definite kinship nouns: *e mbesa* ‘his, her, their niece’. Finally, Newmark et al. mention idiomatic expressions in which definite noun forms are fixed (the change of form results in the loss of idiomaticity), though idioms with in definite nouns are presumably more common.

Newmark et al. add two other sections relevant to the present study: definiteness in proper nouns and generics. He notes that although proper nouns are used in both definite and indefinite forms (and declined in the same way as common nouns), their definiteness is different from that of

common nouns (they have inherently unique reference), and depends on their syntactic role. Generally subject and objects nouns (including proper names and plural nouns), must take a determiner (a numeral, demonstrative, indefinite pronoun, etc.), or definite forms. As the use of determiners is rare with proper names, Albanian proper nouns/names have usually definite forms. However, there are syntactic positions in which proper names must have indefinite forms. They are: (i) second constituent of an appositive construction with a preceding definite noun: *Në fshatin Dushk* ‘In the village of Dushk’; (ii) subject complement; (iii) object complement: *E quajnë Agim* ‘They call him Agim’; (iv) vocative without a subsequent identifying element: *L.amtumirë, Petrit!* ‘Goodbye, Petrit!’; (v) head of noun phrase modified by an adjective: *i ziu Petrit* - ‘poor Petrit’; (vi) direct object after locative prepositions or the ablative preposition *prej* ‘from’: *prej Skrapari* ‘from Shrapar’; (vii) ablative modifier: *duhan Shkodre* ‘tobacco from Shkodër (or Shkodër tobacco)’. It is worth noting that six of the syntactic positions (i.e., all but (v)) are the same syntactic functions that require the use of indefinite form in common nouns. In other words, it appears that proper names are largely subject to the same rules of using indefinite forms as common nouns.

The final section is devoted to definiteness in generics. It says that both definite and indefinite forms of common nouns may be used generically. Mostly it is the definite form that is used with generic reference, and unlike in English not only with countable, but also with uncountable (mass, abstract, deverbal and other) nouns. So, in Albanian *gruri* ‘the wheat’ may have generic reference while *grure* ‘wheat’ cannot, a reverse situation to that in English. The indefinite form may be used generically only with countable nouns, and it seems that there is an analogous difference between generic definite and indefinite singular nouns (p. 159): “In Albanian, however, the definite form of common nouns refers to an idealized being or abstract class while the indefinite generic is used to pick out certain distinctive traits attributable to members of the class.” The section does not say, though, whether plural nouns, definite or indefinite, are used with generic reference in Albanian.

All in all, the similarities with English seem to be more in the use of definite nouns than indefinite nouns, more in the use of generics than proper names. Still the differences between the operation of the category of definiteness in Albanian and English are not altogether clear from Newmark et al.’s account and it is to be hoped that the following research will add some new findings.

1.4 Reference grammar accounts of the expression of definiteness in English

As has already been mentioned, the well-described category of in/definiteness in English (specifically the use of the definite article as the principal determiner and means of expressing definiteness in English) was chosen as a frame of reference that will enable us to describe how Albanian deals with definite reference expressed in English by the definite article.

The description of the category of in/definiteness in English is based on a distinction between two basic kinds of reference, generic and non-generic (specific), each of which represents a special category and makes a different use of the determiners. Non-generic reference in its turn subsumes definite and indefinite reference. The uses of the (central) determiners are then related to each of these kinds of reference and the kind and form of nouns (un/countable, singular/plural, common/proper) with which the determiners are used.

The description of definite reference, which is the subject of inquiry here, is divided into two sections, the realization of definite reference with common nouns and proper nouns (both of which come under the heading of definite descriptions; see 1.1). Also, as the focus of the study is very much on the use of the definite article, and the definite article is one of the principal means of realizing generic reference in English, we shall briefly touch on generic reference expressed by the definite article in English and the way the corresponding uses of nouns are realized in Albanian.

1.4.1 English Common Nouns and Definiteness

According to Dušková et al. (1988/2003, 59), Quirk et al. (1985, 265ff) and others, the category of in/definiteness in English consists in imparting to the common noun information about its reference which can be either generic or non-generic (also called specific, singulative). The noun with non-generic reference can have either a definite (i.e. identifiable, unique) referent due to the properties of the context/utterance (cotext) or an indefinite referent (new, mentioned for the first time, etc.).

Non-generic in/definite reference in English is primarily expressed by the central determiners, the choice of which depends not only on the type of reference, but also on whether the noun is countable/uncountable and singular/plural. The central determiners (articles) are:

- 1) definite article
- 2) indefinite article
- 3) zero (and null) article
- 4) *some*

This chapter will briefly discuss the use of English articles, especially the one with non-generic definite reference in the language; its generic reference will be discussed separately.

The articles and other determiners (predeterminers, such as *all* and *both*, and postdeterminers, i.e. cardinals, ordinals and quantifiers) in English stand before the noun they determine. Unlike in Albanian, the English article occupies the initial position in the NP and only exceptionally appears in other positions and then only in the following cases:

- a) when the adjective in preposition is intensified by the following adverbs: *so*, *as*, *too*, *however*: *so damaging a statement*, *as good a hotel as any other*, etc.
- b) after *any/no worse*, *no less*: *he is no worse a doctor for being occasionally rude to his patients*
- c) after *rather* and *quite*, the position of the article is optional: *a quite elementary error* – *quite an elementary error*
- d) after *what* in exclamative sentences: *What a nonsense!*
- e) after the quantifier *many* (with the meaning *a large number of*): *many a man*
- f) after *both*, *all*, *double*, *treble*, *half*, etc.: *all the time*, *half the students*, etc.

Syntactically speaking, the article in English functioning as a determiner is an obligatory element of the noun phrase specifying or determining its head (the noun) in terms of reference. Also, the central determiners, such as the articles, in English do not combine with one another within a noun phrase and their distribution is one to one, i.e. one noun: one article. This does not apply to pre- and postdeterminers which, as their name suggests may appear before and after the central determiners.

The definite article *the*, the principal indicator of definiteness in English, is used with nouns in both singular and plural. It has two pronunciation variants, [ðə] before words starting with a consonant, such as *the table* and [ði] appearing before an initial vowel or silent *h* (*the aim*, *the heir*). The second variant can also occur in cases when a word in a context/discourse has to be stressed, especially in dictations and with honorific function.

From the point of view of its historical development in English, the definite article is described by the OED as being the “reduced and flexionless stem of the Old English demonstrative *se*, *séo* (later *þe*, *þéo*), *þæt*, the neuter sing. of which has come down as the dem. pron. and adj. *that*.” The primary sense of the definite article still survives in certain idiomatic constructions, e.g. *for the moment*, *for the time being*, *of the kind (sort)*, etc.

The indefinite article appears only in the singular; its forms being *a*, *an*, both graphic and pronunciation variants. In plural, it is replaced by a zero article or the unstressed *some* [sʌm], [sm]. The *a* [ə] form appears in front of a pronounced consonant (*a table*, *a juvenile*), whereas *an* [ən] stands in front of words with an initial vowel: *an hour*.

The indefinite article developed via the numeral *one* (OE *ān*). The meaning of the numeral still

remains present in the following constructions: *once a week, at a blow, at a draught, in a word, of an age*, etc.

The type of reference most extensively discussed in the literature is non-generic reference, although generic use (see 1.4.2) has also been covered in great detail.

Table 25: Uses of the English articles with non-generic reference

Type of reference		count nouns	non-count nouns
non-generic (singulative)	definite	the boy, the boys	the music, the milk
	indefinite	a boy, boys, some boys	music, some music milk, some milk

Table 26: Uses of the English articles with generic reference

Type of reference	count nouns	non-count nouns
generic	the boy a boy boys	music milk

Unlike generic reference, **non-generic definite reference** is utterance- (or context-) or/and context-dependent. Quirk et al. (1985, 265) define the use of the definite article as ‘referring to something that can be identified uniquely in the contextual or general knowledge shared by speaker and hearer’. Indeed, uniqueness (and also inclusiveness in the case of plural nouns when the complete set of referents is referred to in a given situation), is a feature common to all of the following types of use resulting in definite reference:

- a) **situational reference** (due to the immediate and the larger situation)
- b) **direct anaphoric reference**
- c) **associative (typically indirect anaphoric) reference**
- d) **sporadic reference**
- e) **logical use of *the***
- f) **modification-induced definite reference (cataphoric or anaphoric)** due to the extension of the NP including:
 - (i) **postmodifier (dependent clause and other types of postmodification)**
 - (ii) **premodifier**
 - (iii) **apposition**
- g) **body part reference**
- h) **phraseology**

Now the definite reference types of use in more detail:

a) Situational reference in English is divided into two kinds. The first involves instances when the **immediate situation** offers a clue to the identity of the referent and so requires the use of the definite article. It does not require any previous knowledge of the object being referred to. On the other hand, both, the speaker and the hearer are aware of the existence of the given object by its visibility and/or its **uniqueness** in a certain context/situation: *Sit down on the sofa*. (the referent is visible in the given situation and unique at the same time). The second type of situational reference, called the **larger situation** by Quirk et al. (1985, 266), relies on shared general knowledge of both the speaker and the hearer which makes the referent easily identifiable. It may appear within e.g. family members (*the letterbox*), one city/town (*the Townhall*), one country (*the President*), our planet (*the sun, the moon, the stars, etc.*).

b) Direct anaphoric reference describes instances when the referent is known to both, the speaker and the hearer from the previous context. The definite article signals that the word is co-referential with the word/item mentioned earlier in the discourse. Direct anaphoric reference is mostly used to avoid repetition by replacing the word with a synonymous expression, a more general or specific word (i.e. a hyperonym or a hyponym), a periphrastic construction, etc. *She was holding a white orchid. The flower was splendid (orchid = flower)*. Anaphoric reference is also based on derivational or word-family relations: *We had to travel a lot. The journey was not pleasant. (travel-journey)*.

c) Associative reference (indirect anaphora) derives its identifying force from domain-specific vocabulary appropriate to a particular situation, object, activity (*kitchen: the cooker, the fridge, the sink, the dishwasher, the floor, etc.; car: the driving wheel, the bonnet, the windshield etc.*); the cross-referencing between the items in the domain makes for default definite reference: *We wanted to buy a flat, so went to see it first. The walls were freshly painted and the windows cleaned.*

d) Sporadic reference is a term sometimes used to describe definite reference in words representing not a specific referent but an institution which may occur at irregular intervals or only in a few places (i.e. sporadically): *They went to the cinema/the theatre, etc. twice a week*. However the category of sporadic reference nouns is sometimes conceived more broadly and includes several other subcategories (means of communication and transport, *the radio, the telephone, the television, the bus, the tram*; times of day and night, seasons, meals and illnesses). Frequent institutionalized or phraseological use may lead to the alternation or replacement of the definite article with zero (*the/0 television*).

e) Logical use of the definite article (CGEL, 270) is explained as a phenomenon restricted to cases in which we do not have to deal with the knowledge of the world as much as the logical

interpretation of certain premodifiers and postdeterminers which in a way make the head of the noun phrase “unique”. The logical use of *the* depends on the meaning of these adjectives and postdeterminers which inevitably single out the head noun as the “one and only”. They include ordinals (*the first, the next, the last*), superlatives (*the tallest, the best*), and adjectives like *same* and *only*. The postdeterminers and adjectives whose meaning results in unique, and therefore definite, reference are listed below:

1. ordinals, e.g. *the first, the second, the third*;
2. general ordinals, e.g. *the next, the following, the opening, the initial, the last, the final*;
3. adjectives of identity and exclusiveness: *the same, the only, the sole*;
4. superlative adjectives, e.g. *the best, the largest, the optimum, the main, etc.*

f) Modification-affected definite reference (cataphoric or anaphoric) due to the extension of the NP occurs when the addition of the element results in identifiability and/or inclusive (unique) reference (*I found **the** photo of **the** friend that I was looking for*). On the other hand, if the use of the element does not have such an effect the indefinite article may also appear. This is valid for cases with more than one possible referent of the extended NP, for example, when a relative clause is used as a postmodifier: *She carried **a** bag that was too heavy for her*.

(i) Reference affected by the postmodifier, the restrictive relative clause and other types of postmodification, results in the use of the definite article when the postmodifier makes the referent specific or restricts its reference enough to make it unambiguously identifiable (or unique) for the hearer: *I loved **the** opera that we saw last night*.

Restrictive postmodification of the head noun can also be expressed by an infinitive, as in: *The one to read the poem is Jack*; a participle as in *the text written above*; or a (adverbial) prepositional phrase (*I saw it in the bookshop on the corner of the street*)

Especially, extension by means of a prepositional *of*-phrase appears in this type of postmodification quite often. It usually involves cataphora combined with associative reference. In other words, the *of*-phrase extends/postmodifies the head noun, as in: ***the bottom** of the sea, **the pages** of the thesis*, etc. On the other hand, the definite article could be easily replaced by an indefinite one when the head noun may possibly refer to more than one possible item of a certain kind, as in: ***the title page** of the book vs. **a** page of the book*.

Another type of postmodification is that by the **attributive clause** that extends/postmodifies the head noun. As with other types of postmodification it realizes cataphoric reference but in this case the reference is always definite: *The fact that **he won the tournament once does not make him an eternal winner***.

Definite reference due to **(ii) premodification** occurs when the premodifier indicates uniqueness or serves to unambiguously identify the head noun, as in: *I like the **red** vase. What is the*

right time?, *the only exception*, *the same man* etc. See also the logical use of the definite article.

Definite reference on the basis of **(iii) apposition** occurs with restrictive appositive constructions, e.g. *the number eight*, *the name Jack*, *the river Thames*, etc. Another type of restrictive apposition is that with *of*-phrases, as in: *the month of December*, *the City of London*, etc.

g) Body part reference. Another interesting feature of the definite article in English is its occurrence with reference to body parts. The use of the body parts preceded by a preposition always requires the definite article in between the preposition and the noun standing for the part of body in question:

Mary banged herself on the forehead.

They pulled her by her hair.

Everyone gave us a pat on the back.

Don't keep digging me in the ribs.

The definite article also appears in cases in which the possessor of the body parts is syntactically an object and the body part appear as a prepositional complement to the object, as in:

I shook him by the hand.

I shook his hand.

In all the cases above the definite article can in English be replaced by a **possessive pronoun**, as in:

I shook him by his hand.

He kissed her on her cheek.

She patted him on his shoulder.

My mother complains of a pain in the/her hip.

The wanted man has a scar on the/his left cheek.

Sometimes, the possessor is not directly stated in the sentence, but it is implied, as in:
The doctor diagnosed a fracture of the collarbone. Many patients in the hospital suffered from a disease of the liver.

All the examples listed above show clearly that the definite article “the” once again shows identification with what is shared through common knowledge.

On some occasions, the use of the definite article versus the possessive pronoun is not interchangeable, as it might change the meaning of the sentence, as in:

Have you broken your arm? vs. **Have your broken the arm?*

Or

She throws the ball with her left hand.

vs.

She throws the ball with the left hand.

In the second sentence, the ultimate meaning is that 'she is left-handed'.

Some other cases that appear further are more related to their idiomatic meanings, such as:

They grabbed him by his arm.

vs.

They grabbed him by the arm.

Or

*She looked me in the eye and told me the whole story (*in my eye and told me the whole story)*

From the semantic point of view, the definite article linked with parts of the body very often appears with expressions denoting pain, aches, etc., as in:

have a cold in the head

be red in the face

have spies on the brain

be armed to the teeth

In addition to that, the use of the definite article only applies to the part of the body themselves, but not to the items worn by them, therefore

*They seized him by the beard/the throat/the collar/*the jacket*

An important element in these constructions are the verbs that are used. They are specific in the fact that can take a personal object without a prepositional phrase, as in:

He kicked/hit/tapped me on the shin/ He kicked my shin

but NOT! *He stepped me on the toes/*he stepped my toes

The last observation that CGEL offers, is a so-called “masculine style of speech”. In these cases, the definite article is used instead of the possessive, as in:

How's the back?

Let's have a look at the arm. (a doctor of either sex might say this to a patient)

How's the wife?

Wait till I tell the wife about it!

How's the old man? (on a familiar note)

The definite article found in so-called aphoristic sentences, e.g. proverbs (CGEL, 843ff), comes under the heading of generic use or syntactic substantivization.

The more, the merrier.

The less said, the better.

Spare the rod, and spoil the child.

In some syntactic positions the use of the article may depend on the interplay between several factors. So, the subject complement NP with a countable head noun may be part of either

classifying or identifying verbonominal predication. In classifying predication the subject is more specific while the complement is more general and non-referring (indicating a member of class), and so used with the indefinite article: *My brother is **a teacher***. In identifying predication the subject and the subject complement have the same degree of specificity (uniqueness), which allows the exchange of their positions. Although unique, the count noun in subject complement position appears either with the definite article or (perhaps more frequently), with zero: *For 25 years he was **the president** of the Union of Oil Workers of the Mexican Republic./ Austin Pearce became **managing director** of Esso in 1968 and was **chairman** from 1972 to 1980 . He was **president** of the Institute of Petroleum from 1968 to 1970.* A similar situation occurs in object complements: *He was elected **president**. She was appointed **ambassador**.* With non-count nouns, the subject/object complement position makes no difference: *It seemed good advice/I don't call that courage,* etc.

For the sake of completeness, let us add that **non-generic indefinite reference** primarily expressed by the indefinite article, the zero article or *some*, usually appears in situations where the head noun is mentioned in the context/utterance for the first time without any restrictive information that would imply definite reference: *I turned and saw a sad-eyed middle-aged man sitting on a bench staring at me.* Indefiniteness can also show the presence of more than one referent in a certain situation/utterance: *Take **an apple**.* (meaning that there are several apples of which the hearer can choose one, and the choice is not limited by any specific feature) vs. *Take **the apple**.* (signalling that *the apple* is somehow identifiable in the given situation, e.g. there is only one apple on the table). However, the reasons for indefinite reference may vary. Thus, an utterance such as *I went to a wedding last Sunday. I was talking to **a bridesmaid/some bridesmaids**,* does not necessarily entail that *a bridesmaid/some bridesmaids* refer to the same wedding the speaker went to last Sunday. Therefore, even seemingly anaphoric reference does not always result in definite reference. On the other hand, in the utterance *This is a faulty copy. **A page is missing/Some pages are missing.*** the noun phrase *a page* or *some pages* does refer back to the noun *copy*. Yet the referent remains unspecified as the focus is on the quantity rather than identity. Also, indefinite reference allows for a subtle difference between specific (referring) and non-specific (non-referring) uses. In the case of *I want to invite **a friend**, but my mother does not like **him**.* The speaker refers to a particular friend without indicating his identity. On the other hand in *I want to invite **a friend/friends**. Can you think of **one**?* no particular friend or friends are referred to.

Unless implying uniqueness (see above), modifiers do not affect the type of reference an NP has, *She carried **a/the small leather** bag. – She embroidered **a/the beautiful flower** ornament.* Still, with abstract nouns there may be differences in the use of articles due to premodification, cf. *She showed **greed**.* and *She showed **a terrible greed**.* The standard explanation is that the indefinite article + the modifier single out a certain aspect of the referent. However, there is a certain group of

abstracts that do not allow the use of the indefinite article with them even if premodified, e.g. *guidance, permission, recognition, news, information, weather, money, luck*, etc. Finally, the syntactic function may also prove to be important when it comes to the use of the indefinite article in abstract nouns, though the usage is to some extent unpredictable. For instance, although in adverbial position abstracts usually do not take an article, *Her manner matched his **in abruptness***. We find cases such as: *He gripped my hand with **an abruptness** that revealed his emotions*.

Finally, there are many cases in which definite reference and the use of the definite article borders on or overlaps with **phraseological/idiomatic** usage (*go the right/wrong way, wise after the event, on/by the hour*, etc.).

As has been mentioned above the well-described category of in/definiteness in English (specifically the use of the definite article as the principal determiner and means of expressing definiteness in English), was chosen as a frame of reference that will enable us to describe how Albanian deals with definite reference expressed in English by the definite article.

1.4.2 The English definite article with generic reference

There are multiple ways to express generic reference in English. It can be achieved via a definite or indefinite article with a count noun and null article with a non-count noun or with a noun in plural. In English, the definite article with generic reference appears in cases, where the singular can be replaced by the plural, in other words where the number is neutralized. It usually refers to a group, subgroup of people, species, items, etc. that share common features.

It can also appear after certain verbs/predicates that do not allow the appearance of the indefinite article, such as: *abound, be rare, increase/decrease, scatter, collect*, etc.

Another case where the definite article appears with a generic function in English are situations in which the indefinite article *a* means *any*. In these cases, the indefinite article is not accepted, but it is replaced by a generic *the* or a generic plural.

English grammarians often mention that the plural preceded by a zero article has the highest occurrence while being used with a generic reference.

When it comes to the replacement of a generic *the* by a generic *a*, therefore co-occur while being used with a generic function, it has to be mentioned that there is a slight stylistic differentiation in their use. Generic *a* is more often used in the spoken language and may refer to any member of the group in question, generic *the*, on the other hand, appears to be more formal and to refer to a typical member of a particular group.

Contrary to what has been said above, the use of the generic *the* or *a* sometimes depends

solely on the preferences of the speaker without much change in the meaning of the noun they accompany. However, where the definite article accompanies converted nouns, such as *the poor*, *the rich*, etc., it can never be replaced by an indefinite generic article.

1.4.3 Proper nouns and the idea of “*properhood*”

An important point that should be taken into consideration when talking about proper nouns is how they differ from common nouns. In a majority of languages, proper nouns have a special position. The idea of “*properhood*” as Coates (2006) calls it goes back to the Stoics and already Dionysus Thrax spoke about it: ‘nouns’ are either proper or not, and ‘proper nouns’ or naming expressions are a (sub)category with a membership that can in principle be specified.

In addition to that, Coates (2006) and Kałuża (1981) argue that the best characterization of the nature of properhood is pragmatic. In their opinion, it is a type of referring that discounts the sense of any lexical item. Moreover, *properhood* is not a structural (grammatical or other), category or an attribute of such a category, but contrary to this, proper nouns are never used with any of their apparent senses or entailments. To put it more clearly, proper nouns developed no connotation, therefore no repeatability in different situations.

Barbara Abbott (2005, 100f) identifies proper names as “interesting expressions”: “Proper names may call to mind the quip about whales – seem to loom long in the category of fish, but on closer look, they turn out not to be fish at all”. Semantically, she traces their origin back from the Latin word *nomen* “name” related to nominal in other words verbal as opposed to real. From a linguistic viewpoint, to name somebody or something is to identify them through a linguistic expression (very often a NP). Abbot also admits, though, that proper names are striking and strange words in their ability of being arbitrary. As an illustrative example, she stresses the fact that proper names have an autonomous right to have “non-standard pronunciation convention” and the fact that they are mostly omitted from dictionaries.

Proper nouns, in fact, dispose of unique denotation and many standard grammars introduce at least two important factors as relevant in their differentiation from common nouns. First, the formal feature includes the capital initial letter and second, the functional feature consists in the basic onymic function (nomination, identification, differentiation). The first feature, i.e. the initial capital is not necessarily a sign of only proper nouns. Biber et al. (1991, 245) observe that in English, for example, the use of the initial capital letters is more widespread than in other languages. It appears in objects and commercial products, religions, political parties, nationalities, languages, adjectives and common nouns derived from descriptive noun phrases, etc. The onymic differentiation, on the

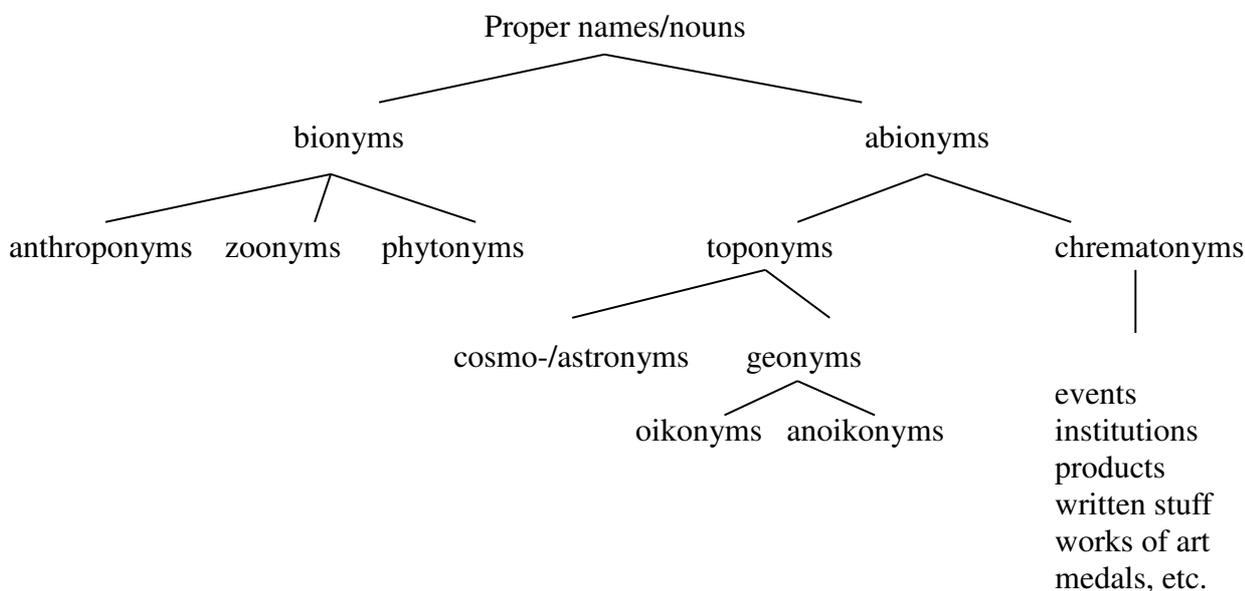
other hand, seems to be more to the point.

The definition that, for example, Šrámek (1999, 11) gives of proper nouns describes them as “language/lexical units that contrary to apelatives/common nouns denote individual objects not on the basis of any definition”. A proper noun from this perspective is seen as a result of a certain interaction (of circumstances, conditions, categories, etc.).

The interaction of different features originates from three major fields:

- 1) Field of objects, phenomena and relations
- 2) Language factual field
- 3) Field of communicative facts

While Fields 1 and 3 are subject to extra-linguistic reality, field 2 deals with the description of proper nouns from a linguistic point of view. Even though this study is not concerned with the description of onymic categories as such, we found it expedient to at least give a general survey below. The survey of proper name categories will be used to check for the completeness of the list of categories which are used in English and especially in Albanian with the definite article. The study of proper names, onomastics or onomatology, works with the following major divisions of proper nouns onymically differentiated: (a) bionyms and abionyms (toponyms and chrematonyms). Schematically the division can be illustrated as follows:



The study of **bionyms** deals with the names of living organisms. It can be divided into three areas, the study of *anthroponyms*, or personal proper names, *zoonyms*, the names of animals and *phytonyms*, the names of plants, flowers, etc. The category of (personal and group), anthroponyms includes forenames, surnames, patronyms, metronyms, hypocoristics, nicknames, pseudonyms, clan

names, ethnonyms (the name of a people or ethnic group), endonyms, exonyms, names of citizens/inhabitants or fictitious anthonyms, theonyms (names of deities), and others. Zoonyms describe animal names, but also pets and fictitious or mythical animals (gryphon, phoenix).

The other two categories, toponyms and chrematonyms, are sometimes called abionyms, as they describe inanimate entities or phenomena, either natural or artificial. **Toponyms**, or broadly speaking place names, subsume extraterrestrial place names, *cosmonyms* (names of galaxies), and *astronyms* (stars, planets, etc.); *geonyms*, geographical names locatable on the Earth. Geonyms are divided into the following main subcategories:

- choronyms or names of larger natural or administrative units (continents, countries, regions, districts and areas, territories, states, etc.)
- oikonoms or names of inhabited places or their parts (city, towns, villages, group of houses, etc.), hodonyms (names of roads, streets, squares, bridges, etc.), necronym (names of cemeteries)
- anoikonoms, local names of uninhabited objects or places, oronyms (mountains, hills, etc.), hydronyms (names of bodies of water, oceans, seas, rivers, lakes, etc.), drymonyms (names of forests, groves), agronyms (names of fields, pastures), dromonyms (names of transportation routes)
- speleonyms (names of caves, etc.)
- honorific toponyms usually given to places on the basis of an important event, after a person, group, etc.
- toll toponyms – names given after the way the soil was produced

The last huge group of proper nouns are **chrematonyms**. These stand for names of man-made objects/phenomena, etc., both material and immaterial. They do not derive identity from any natural unit, but from social, economic, cultural, political or other activities, events and relationships. They roughly divide into the following main subgroups:

- names of social events:
 - chrononyms (names of special periods of time, holidays, feasts)
 - names of historical events
- ergonyms, names of institutions
 - names of military, political units
 - names of legal units, etc.
 - names of industrial, economic, etc. units
 - names of educational, cultural, research, sanitary/health units
- names of results/products of human, social activities

- actonyms or documentonyms: diplomatic acts and various documents (treatises, agreements)
- artionyms, names of works of art (pictures, statues, films, TV series)
- biblionyms, names of written works (books, newspapers, journals)
- phaleronyms, names of medals decorations, orders, awards
- unicationyms, names of unique products or objects
- pojeronyms , names of means of transport, (ships, trains, etc.)
- pragmatonyms, names of industrial products (cars, food products, etc.)

Apart from their onymic functions in which they differ from common nouns, English proper nouns/names according to Quirk et al. (1985) and Huddleston and Pullum (2002) generally lack both article and number contrast (although they may take the definite article), and modification, i.e. all the features that are characteristic of common nouns.

1.4.4 English proper nouns and definiteness

When it comes to definiteness in proper nouns, English grammars distinguish between proper nouns (*Shakespeare, September, Milwaukee, the Sahara* etc.), and composite proper names (*Windsor Castle, the Albert Hall*). Both Quirk et al. and Huddleston and Pullum observe that proper nouns may often be combined with additional words called “descriptors” (Quirk et al., 1985, 288). Descriptors also appear with an initial capital letter and create a composite name together with the proper noun modified by the descriptor (e.g. *Senator Morse, Dallas Road*, etc.). The main distinction between proper nouns and proper names is the fact that proper nouns consist of one word and generally function as the head of proper names. By contrast, proper names which may also consist of one word (*The Guardian*), typically, include more words (*the Suez Canal*) and are grammatically considered to be one unit (Quirk et al., 1985, 288). This means that even if a name is grammatically analysable (e.g. *King’s College* = genitive noun + head noun), it does not allow the insertion of other words, inflection, etc. (*King’s Famous College).

Once the difference between proper nouns and names is made clear, we can proceed to the way they express the category of in/definiteness. In fact, as it was already mentioned above, proper nouns and names lack the article contrast, therefore the marking of in/definiteness is unnecessary for them. This is due to the following reasons:

First of all, a proper noun/name has the ability of definiteness already coined in itself. For that matter, it refers to a particular entity or collection of entities, and therefore excludes the use of

an indefinite determiner (Huddleston and Pullum, 2002, 517). From this perspective, the marking of definiteness becomes unnecessary. To this observation, Kažuža (1981, 90) adds that articles used with proper nouns are fundamentally redundant as the entity signified by the noun is unique and does not need to be particularized.

Secondly, Dušková (1988, 65) claims that proper nouns/names express non-generic, definite reference. In fact, they behave absolutely the same way as common nouns referring to a single object that is determined in the context of the discourse. Dušková explains the use of the article in nouns expressing non-generic, definite reference as a use based on equal knowledge on both parts, that of the speaker and the hearer. Despite all the reasons mentioned above that speak against the use of articles with proper nouns or names, there are several cases that English grammars list as indispensable for the use of articles. In these cases the distinction between proper nouns/names and common nouns is not that strictly given. While Huddleston and Pullum (2002, 520) talk about “the secondary use of the proper nouns”, Kažuža (1981, 110) and Biber et al. (1991, 246) argue that proper nouns/names may lead to derivatives which behave as common nouns. In addition to that, Biber et al. (1991, 246) and Quirk et al. (1985, 289) also say that in cases where proper nouns behave as common nouns, their semantic meaning varies by article contrast. This happens in basically two cases; first if a proper noun/name is context-dependent or reference-related and second, when it is not.

For the purposes of the present study which deals with formally expressed definiteness, the important fact is that in English “[s]ome types of proper nouns are customarily preceded by the definite article (e.g. *the Andes* ...), but they lack article contrast since the article cannot be normally varied (**an Ande*, **some Andes*). Secondly, there is a gradient between names and definite descriptions and, “the absence of a clear-cut boundary between names and definite descriptions” results in, “vacillation between the use and omission of the definite article” (Quirk et al. 1985, 289, 295). Thus Quirk et al. speak of, ‘descriptive names’ and this, “in-between area of names preceded by the definite article” is of particular interest to us because it is names proper and descriptive names with the definite article where we can expect differences between English and Albanian.

It is argued that proper nouns/names with a determiner are very often in a way context/situation dependent, but this is not always the case. There are proper nouns/names that are used with articles (determiners) by convention. All in all, the typical inherent definiteness in proper nouns/names that behave as common nouns is lost. Like common nouns, they may be accompanied by a definite, indefinite and null article as well as with other determiners.

Of the many grammars that were consulted, such as Dušková et al. (1988), Quirk et al. (1985) and many others, Huddleston and Pullum’s (2002, 521) distinction of the context/situation dependency of proper noun/name usage seems to be the most elucidatory. They basically

distinguish five cases when proper nouns/names behave as common nouns in English.

- 1) denotation of a set of bearers of the name: ***The Paul** that you met a while ago is my husband.*
- 2) denotation of a set of entities having relevant properties of the bearer of the name: *He is not **a Beethoven.***
- 3) denotation of a set of manifestations of the bearer of the name: *This not **the London** I remember.*
- 4) denotation of a set of products created by the bearer of the name: *We listened to **some Chopin** tonight.*
- 5) denotation of a set of copies/editions, etc. of the entity bearing the name: *Can I have a look at your **Morning Herald**?*

Cases in which proper nouns/names take or do not take an article by convention are sometimes regarded as analogous to the opposition between weak and strong proper nouns/names. This division is shown in Huddleston and Pullum (2002, 517) and it is based on the presence/absence of an article. Strong proper nouns/names do not occur with an article, whereas the weak ones are accompanied by the definite article. This is valid for proper nouns/names in the singular only. The plural is according to this division always strong, therefore articleless. On the other hand, though, we encounter examples such as *the Americas, The Browns*.

Sometimes, there is not a clear-cut dividing line between weak and strong proper nouns/names and both variants [e.g. (the) Ukraine] are used without any difference in meaning as the one showed in Quirk et al. (1985, 295).

Strong proper nouns/names are used without an article or we should say with a null article. Some grammarians make a crucial difference between a zero and a null article as shown in 1.2. Dušková et al. (1988, 75), for example, argues that the zero article is a means of determination in non-generic indefinite reference or definite reference. Since proper nouns/names do not show the types of references mentioned above, it is indispensable to call the missing article a null and not a zero article.

Null-form or **strong proper nouns/names** (cf. also Kaluža 1981, 112-113) are generally names of human beings and their pets, place names of human geography and names of mountains. The geographical entities are said to lack the formal article as their exterior boundaries and identity are clear and the article would be redundant in providing “more” clarification. The fact that human beings and the names of their pets lack articles is due to the unique denotation of the entity they name; therefore a great majority of these nouns/names are used without any article (Quirk et al., 1985, 151f) and this absence of a formal article generally concerns: personal names, temporal names and geographical names.

A. Personal names (with or without titles)

Independently on whether or not personal names are accompanied by titles, they are usually not preceded by an article in English. Within personal names are included the following:

- given (first or Christian), name alone: *Jane*
- the surname (family or last name), alone: *Smith*
- given name (s) and the surname together: *Jane Elisabeth Smith*.

As already mentioned above, personal names can also be preceded by a title without an article, such as *Mr, Miss, Mrs, Lord, Sir*, etc. In familiar style, kinship terms with unique reference behave as proper names in the fact that they dispose of no determiner and are written with a capital letter, such as e.g., *Mummy, Daddy*, etc.

Despite the fact that personal names are generally used without an article, there are several exceptions to the rule:

- (i) imperial titles: *the Emperor Napoleon*
- (ii) *the Lord* (with religious reference)
- (iii) titles of peerage while followed by an *of- phrase*: *the Duke of Wellington*

B. Temporal names are usually used without any articles in cases where they refer to the period as a recurrent item in the calendar. These include:

- (i) names of festivals, religious periods: *Christmas, Easter, Independence Day*, etc.
- (ii) names of months and days of the week

These names, though, very often behave as common nouns, especially in the cases when they refer to a particular period or when they refer collectively to more than one occasion. This happens especially in connection with *next* and *last* + a noun :

- *She left (on the) next Sunday.*
- *She left (the) next day.*

Days of the week also appear with an indefinite article, as in:

- *She left on a Monday.*

The indefinite article in this case does not refer to any particular *Monday*.

C. Geographical names divide into the following groups:

- (i) continents *North America, South America, Europe, Asia*, etc.
(! but *the Arctic* as a polar region, *the Americas* denoting the whole set of such referents see plural nouns below)
- (ii) countries, counties, states, etc. *England, Brasil, Albania, France*, etc.
- (iii) cities, towns, etc. *Prague, London, Paris*, etc.
- (iv) lakes, *Lake Michigan, Ohrid Lake*, which can also appear with the definite article; it depends on the word order, (see **the** Michigan Lake, etc.)

(v) mountains *Ben Nevis, Mont Blanc*, etc.

(vi) other locative names consisting of proper noun + common noun as a descriptor. These constructions are typical of the names of natural features (e.g. forests, woods and hills), but also man-made features (roads, streets, squares, buildings, airports, parks and gardens).

Exceptions are: *the Albert Hall, the Mansion House, the Mall, the Strand*, etc.

Sometimes, names of British universities with one element being a place name are also listed within strong proper nouns. They can usually have 2 forms: *the University of London* and *London University*

In some cases, the definite article is optional, as in: *(the) Edgware Road, (the) Old Kent Road* (but only! *Oxford Street, Fifth Avenue*). Another exception to the rule is a large modern highway – with the definite article as well (*the San Diego Freeway, the Merrit Parkway*, etc.)

Let us now proceed to a survey of **weak proper nouns/names** or proper nouns/names with articles that usually appear:

- without modification (*the Kremlin*)
- with premodification (*the Suez Canal*)
- with postmodification (*the House of Commons, the Institute of Psychiatry*)
- with ellipsis of elements – sometimes, the second element is omitted from the whole as the remaining part has been recognised as the full name: *the Tate (Gallery), the Atlantic (Ocean), the Mediterranean (Sea), the Mermaid (theatre), the (River) Thames*, etc.

As is clear from the above, the article is not part of the naming, the only exception is *The Hague* with a capital “T” where both words appear with a capital letter.

Somewhere in between the weak and the strong proper nouns/names, we can encounter several specific classes of names typically preceded by *the*. Being accompanied by the definite article, they should be listed under weak proper nouns, but because of quite a number of exceptions (as shown in the survey below), their status is fluctuating.

In this group we include:

(a) Plural names in general, e.g. *the Netherlands, the Great Lakes*, etc.

(i) Groups of islands – *the Hebrides*

(ii) Ranges of mountains and hills (*the Himalayas*) – but! *Kensington Gardens, Burnham Beeches*, etc.

(b) Other geographical names:

(i) Rivers: *the Avon (the River Avon)* viz nahoře, proč na dvou místech?

(ii) Seas and oceans: *the Pacific (Ocean)*

(iii) Canals: *the Panama Canal, the Suez Canal*, etc.

- (iv) Other geographical features of coastline: *the Gulf of Mexico*
- (c) Public institutions and facilities
 - (i) Hotels and restaurants: *the Grand Hotel, the Waldorf Astoria, etc.*
 - (ii) Theatres, opera houses, cinemas and clubs: *the Globe, the Criterion, etc.*
 - (iii) Museums, libraries, hospitals, etc.: *the British Museum, the British Library, etc.*
(but! *Drury Lane, Covent Garden*)
- (d) Ships and planes: *the Victory, the Spirit of St. Louis, etc.*
- (e) Newspapers and periodicals: *the New York Times, the Economist, etc.*
(exceptions: magazines and periodicals have a zero article: *Time, Punch, New Scientist, etc.*)

There are some exceptions concerning the use of the definite article with some weak proper nouns/names listed below:

- (a) Names of some cities: *The Hague*
- (b) Certain city districts: *the Bronx, the East End, etc.*

So-called Latinate proper nouns/names ending in *-ia* have a zero article: *Siberia, Scandinavia, etc.*

Gordon and Krilova (1964), whose practical list of proper names preceded by articles was also consulted, explain the use of articles with proper names as a feature based only on tradition. At the same time, though, they also admit that some cases might be due to some historical reasons, therefore examples like *the Sudan, the Tyrol, etc.* Very often, the definite article seems to be the elliptical leftover from a common noun that was primarily added, therefore we have cases, such as *the Sahara (desert), the Crimea (peninsula), the Pacific (ocean), the Baltic (sea), the Bedford (hotel), the Lancet (magazine)* and many others. Similarly to this, we have cases like, *the Urals* (meaning the mountain range, therefore the use of the definite article), or *the Congo* where the name originally denoted the river. Generally speaking, the names of rivers in English appear with the definite article for obvious reasons, i.e. they used to have the noun *river* inserted in them sometime in the past, which has not persisted in present day English.

2. Research project - data sources, collection and analysis

The empirical research is divided into two parts. Each of them uses a different approach. In the first part the approach is system-oriented, i.e. it focuses on different types of definite reference marked by the definite article in English and the ways in which they are matched by means of expressing definiteness in Albanian. The system-oriented part of the research consists of two major parts of analysis, one dealing with common nouns, the other with proper nouns/names. It is in fact a data-based extension of Section 1.4.

The second approach is text-oriented using samples of parallel texts, an English original and its Albanian translation to examine the distribution of in/definite reference nouns in the samples of the two languages rather than individual examples. It consists of two steps. In the first, it looks at all instances of nouns with the definite article in the English text and how they are translated into Albanian, and conversely, it investigates the English equivalents of all the Albanian definite form nouns in the same stretch of text. The aim is to find out to what extent there is an overlap between the Albanian and the English definiteness marking. In the second step, the samples of text are examined in order to find out the distribution of nouns with both definite and indefinite marking and compare the situation in English and Albanian.

The research project of the study, as has been mentioned above, is seeking to clarify two basic questions. The first one is what happens with Albanian common nouns and proper nouns/names in a context where in English we find the definite article. The second question asks what happens with English common and proper nouns in a context where in Albanian we find the definite article. The empirical analysis aims to discover and describe the overlaps and asymmetries in the use of the definite article/form. In the process we hope to arrive at a better understanding of both the main principles and the details of Albanian definite article/form usage.

2.1 Introduction to the Albanian corpus

The corpus began to be compiled three years ago and is still of a very modest size. It is mostly made up of texts dating from a period of approximately two years, i.e. 2008-2010, and includes language data roughly from 1995 to 2010. The collection of the texts resulted in a monolingual corpus counting cca 1,370,000 words. For obvious reasons, it consists of data on written Albanian only and omits the spoken language.

The texts were acquired both directly in electronic form either from the web or as e-books

(pdf, txt format, etc.), and by scanning in the following proportion: web data represent some 82.0 % of the corpus, scanned book copies form cca 15.0 % of the selected texts and ebooks about 3,0 %. All excerpts are referenced as follows: web data (generated from www.google.com), include name, date and link to the webpage. Scanned and electronically acquired books, on the other hand, are provided with the name of the author, title and other relevant bibliographic information.

It was our primary intention to collect a balanced corpus, stylistically differentiated in the following three categories. The creation of the corpus is a long-term project and is not compiled specifically for the purposes of the present dissertation (actually only parts of it were used – see below). The corpus is meant to serve as a data-base for everyday practical reference or future research. The following description provides a brief outline of its structure and contents:

(1) **Journalistic style** (951 959 words; 69.7 %)

This section includes: press reports, editorials, press articles, academic papers, etc.:

1) Robert Elsie (www.elsie.de) – word count 5290 words

- a) Robert Elsie is a famous Canadian Albanologist whose interest covers Albanian culture, literature and history. The text choice from his website is mostly inspired by the related links Elsie offers.
- b) Some of the collected data in the file is derived from the website "Texts and Documents of Albanian History," designed not as a history of Albania or of the Albanians, but is simply a compilation of historical texts - some important and some less important - from the eleventh to the twenty-first century (all transformed into standard written Albanian), which will add to an understanding of the history and development of Albania and its people.

2) Revista PHOENIX - word count 341 016

- a) (<http://kulturserverhamburg.de/home/shkodra/index.html>). The collected data in this file contain information from the intellectual journal Phoenix founded in Shkodra (Albania) by a group of intellectuals in 1997. The journal offers mostly articles on religion, but also on linguistics, albanology, history, Albanian nationalism, etc. All in all, the language used in this source is highly academic, with duly annotated citations, footnotes and rendered bibliography. An interesting observation is the fact that articles are written both in Tosk and Ghegh (the latter dialect is no longer considered as standard in the Albanian language). The texts used in this file are strictly of the Tosk dialect, albeit standard, though.

3) Gazeta shqiptare online – word count 44 090

(<http://balkanweb.com/gazetav5/kategori.php?topmenuitem=Rreth%20Nesh>)

- a) The texts are derived from the most ancient independent newspaper in Albania. Founded in

1927, the journal was interrupted in 1939 with the fascist occupation of Albania. Its publication was disrupted also during the communist era to restart again in 1993.

Stylistically speaking, the journal represents the European standard of a newspaper; it has always been considered to have an authentic style of modern journalism and has a very long tradition. As far as the territory is concerned, it is published not only in Albania, but also in Greece and Italy.

- 4) Gazeta Shqip – word count 146 521 (<http://www.gazeta-shqip.com/>)
 - a) The journal offers a compilation of standard newspaper texts; with a balanced distribution of articles on politics, economics, culture, sport, foreign affairs, etc.
- 5) Shekulli online – word count 26 110 (<http://www.shekulli.com.al/>)
 - a) Shekulli online is a daily newspaper with a balanced distribution of articles on politics, economics, culture, sport, arts and education.
- 6) Panorama online – word count 59 383 (<http://www.panorama.com.al/index.php?id=8348>)
 - a) Texts derived from Panorama online are somewhere in between a standard newspaper and a magazine.
- 7) ABCshqip.com – word count 95 216 (<http://abcshqip.com/>)
 - a) The resources included in this newspaper represent a sample of texts derived from a Kosovan magazine. The articles are mostly based on literary style and/or literary reviews. Despite the huge use of the Gheg dialect in Kosovo, the magazine is strictly held in standard Albanian.
- 8) Zemra.shqiptare.net – word count 205 094 (<http://zemrashqiptare.net/>)
 - a) The website of Zemra.shqiptare.net is again a Kosovan magazine. It offers a stylistically balanced language. Interviews, articles on cultural, social, historical and other events are included in this part of the corpus in question, all again, in standard Albanian.
- 9) Shtypi i ditës - word count 16 310 (<http://shtypidites.com/>)
 - a) Shtypi i ditës is a standard newspaper with a variety of articles. The language is highly standard and journalistic. There is one curious hint concerning its contents: it combines news both from Albanian and Kosovan public life (which is stated in the policy of the newspaper).
- 10) Revista JETA – word count 10 773 (<http://www.revistajeta.com/>)
 - a) Revista JETA is a women's magazine. Texts on fashion and beauty, cuisine, health and well-being are included.
- 11) Revista Spektër + Drita – word count 1 376 (<http://www.spekter.com.al/>)
 - a) Revista Spektër is again a women's magazine. Stylistically, the articles are somewhere in between a standard and a tabloid magazine. While compared to Revista JETA above, the topics discussed in this source are more diverse.

12) Forumi shqiptar – word count 780 (<http://www.forumishqiptar.com/>)

- a) The resource is a newspaper website with direct comments of the readers. As the language of the respondents was not always standard, we decided to select only the newspaper texts. Stylistically, the language used is on the border of the written and colloquial style; it still remains standard, though.

Table 27: Journals ordered according to word count

Revista Phoenix	341 016
Zemra shqiptare.net	205 094
Gazeta shqip	146 521
Abc shqip.com	95 216
Panorama online	59 383
Gazeta shqiptare online	44 090
Shekulli online	26 110
Shtypi i dites	16 310
Revista Jeta	10 773
Robert Elsie (webpage)	5 290
Revista Spekter + Drita	1 376
Forum shqiptar	780

(2) Administrative style (211 238 words; 15.5 %)

This section includes the following items:

- 1) Arkiva Mediateke Shqiptare – word count 2 158

((<http://lajme.shqiperia.com/lajme/artikull/iden/1046861483/titulli/Lidhja-e-Kombeve-ben-te-paditurin-per-fatin-e-popullsise-shqiptare-te-Epirit>)).

- a. It represents the language of correspondence in administrative style in formal standard Albanian. The source is taken from the Archives of the Albanian Mediatheque.

- 2) Kushtetuta shqiptare – word count 58 756

(http://sq.wikipedia.org/wiki/Kushtetuta_e_Shqiperisë#Hartimi_dhe_miratimi_i_Kushtetut.C3.ABs_s.C3.AB_sotme)

- a. Kushtetuta shqiptare is a complete version of the Albanian constitution under the presidency of Alfred Moisiu (the modifications in the constitution date from 1997 and 1998). As expected, stylistically speaking, this file contains a typical administrative language.

- 3) Ministria e Financave (Ministry of Finance) – word count 17 444 <http://www.minfin.gov.al/>)

- a. Texts driven from this website include introductory information on the ministry, state budget, legislation documents, etc.

4) Ministria e shëndetsisë (Ministry of Health) – word count 37 800

(<http://www.moh.gov.al/moh/index.php>)

- a. The resources from the above website include introductory information on the staff of the Ministry of Health, legislation documents and norms.

5) Ministria e edukimit dhe e shkencës (Ministry of Education) – word count 95 080

(<http://www.mash.gov.al/>)

- a. The texts include introductory information about the ministry, legislative documents, and educational projects (from elementary schools to post-university levels).

(3) Literary style (202929 words; 14.8 %)

This part of the corpus is largely based on scanned novels by Ismail Kadare and only a few texts that were acquired in electronic form (via the web or otherwise). The list of texts representing fiction is the following:

Muslimanja (258 words) (<http://www.muslimanja.ch/>)

Kadare, Ismail, Përballë pasqyrës së një gruaje (31 909 words)

Kadare, Ismail, Hamleti, princi i vështirë (34 606 words)

Kadare, Ismail, Gjenerali i ushtrisë së vdekur (61 010 words)

Kadare, Ismail, Danjta i pashmagshëm (12 136 words)

Kadare, Ismail, Pallati i ëndrrave (63 010 words)

The monolingual corpus is supplemented with a special section of parallel source-translation texts of fiction, mainly English-Albanian (Czech-Albanian ones are under preparation). The following three pairs of parallel texts, consisting of the English original and the Albanian translation, were extensively used as a data source in this study (see also References):

Steinbeck, John, *Of mice and men* (Penguin edition, 1993).

Steinbeck, John, *Njerëz dhe minj* (Tirana: Ideart, 2003)

Marcuse, Herbert, *The one dimensional man* (London and New York: Routledge 1964, 2002)

Marcuse, Herbert, *Njeriu njëdimensional* (Tirana: 8 Nëntori, 2006)

Rowling, J.K., *Harry Potter and the Sorcerer's Stone* (New York: Scholastic Press, 1998)

Rowling, J.K., *Harry Potter dhe guri filozofal* (Tirana: Dituria, 2002)

2.1.1 The use of the corpus

The corpus texts were used in two ways. They were searched for (a) examples of definite common nouns in non-generic and generic reference and proper names in both the English source texts and in the Albanian originals and translations; (b) the distribution of definite and indefinite reference nouns in the samples of parallel texts, English originals and Albanian translations. The English source texts for the Albanian translations are Herbert Marcuse's *The One-Dimensional Man* (2004, transl. 2006), John Steinbeck's *Of Mice and Men* (1993 ed., transl. 2003), and J.K.Rowling's *Harry Potter and the Sorcerer's Stone* (1998, transl. 2002). The first is a philosophical treatise, i.e. highly intellectual text, the other two represent literature for adults and children. These samples are sufficiently different in style and sufficiently modern (especially the translations) to ensure that the findings are reasonably representative of contemporary language and of widely different genres.

2.2. System-oriented investigation: uses of definite forms in Albanian

For the most part, the chapter employs what might be called a checklist approach. Using an English source text and its Albanian translation, the procedure is essentially to go through the list of the basic sub/types of definite reference resulting in the use of the definite article in English, look for their examples in the English original and check the Albanian equivalents to see how a given type of reference is expressed in Albanian. This approach does not work with consecutive texts continuously and does not list all the instances of nouns with the definite article but, using the texts as a data-base, it focuses on nouns selectively to illustrate the range of definite article uses that together make up the system of definite reference; in this sense it is a system-oriented investigation.

The investigation consists of two parts. The first deals with common nouns. It presents a detailed analysis of English common nouns with the definite article occurring in the texts and their Albanian counterparts. The analysis considers common nouns from two perspectives. First, it concentrates on those denoting non-generic reference and their Albanian correlates. As a complement a brief section on nouns with indefinite reference is added. Secondly, it discusses common nouns expressing generic reference that in English are preceded by the definite article and examines how they are translated into Albanian.

The second part of the analysis is dedicated to proper nouns; the starting point is a checklist of English proper noun/name categories preceded by the definite article and for each category the Albanian counterparts are considered. The checklist is based on Quirk et al. (1985) and a practical handbook by Gordon and Krilova (1964). The English list makes it possible to cover all the relevant areas of Albanian proper nouns/names and the use of indefiniteness with them.

Since these two parts of investigation examine different phenomena, different procedures had to be used. When evaluating non-generic definite article + common noun cases or proper names/nouns with the definite article we based the research on parallel source-translation texts, the monolingual Albanian corpus collected for the purposes of this work and the Internet data. The selection was based on syntactically similar examples. In the case of nouns with generic reference another technique was used, elicitation of information from native speakers of Albanian. The speakers were presented with a list of generic sentences (mostly chosen from English grammars), and asked to translate them spontaneously into Albanian.

2.2.1 Empirical analysis of definiteness in Albanian common nouns

Albanian common nouns will be examined with respect to two kinds of reference. First, the focus will be on definite common nouns expressing non-generic reference. The objective is to inspect cases in the Albanian translation corresponding to English common nouns representing the whole

range of the basic sub/types of definite reference in the English source text to find out whether or not this non-generic reference is, or is not, marked in the same way in Albanian. The comparison strives to find out similarities and discrepancies and provide possible explanations for the findings.

Secondly, the use of the definite article with English common nouns in generic reference is compared with generic reference usage in Albanian. This part of the analysis includes an experiment in which native Albanian speakers are asked to translate English generic sentences into Albanian. The prerequisite is that they are not only native Albanian speakers but also fluent in English. The findings are expected to reveal the similarities and differences between the two languages in the use of determiners with nouns having generic reference.

2.2.1.1 Albanian definite common nouns with non-generic reference

The illustrative material for this part of the analysis has been collected from two parallel texts, an English original and a translation into Albanian. The original is the novel *Of Mice and Men* by John Steinbeck (Penguin edition, 1993). The relatively recent translation into Albanian (*Njerëz dhe minj*, Ideart: Tiranë, 2003) was made by Fredi Proko. The texts were converted into .txt format and compared using the software Antconc 3.3.5 (<http://www.laurenceanthony.net/software/antconc/>), capable of operations needed for the purposes of the study. Additional data came from the Albanian corpus and the Internet.

The analysis concentrates primarily on common nouns preceded by the definite article in English and their corresponding Albanian nouns. The analysis is based on the categories of use described in the theoretical overview and the selection is restricted to syntactically comparable occurrences (noun-to-noun correspondences). The examples provided in this part are in the form of complete English and corresponding Albanian sentences.

In English, non-generic definite reference is mostly co-text (utterance)-dependent or context-dependent and includes the following main interrelated **(sub)types of reference**: immediate situation and larger situation reference, direct anaphoric reference, indirect (associative) anaphoric reference, cataphoric reference, logical reference (implying unique unequivocal interpretation, *the same, the next*), restricted reference (anaphoric or cataphoric) due to premodification or postmodification, and sporadic reference (*the hospital*, etc.). The common denominator of these types is that the determined noun is uniquely and unambiguously identifiable (recoverable) for the hearer/listener in the text.

The first type in the analysis of the common nouns with definite reference is situational reference. Situational reference is of two kinds: one is based on the immediate situation and the other on the larger situation (of general and shared knowledge).

Situational reference based on the immediate extralinguistic situation in which the referent is clearly visible and unique at the same time is illustrated by the following examples:

*Sit down on **the sofa**. / Ulu mbi divan.*

*Could you pass me **the salt**, please? / A mund të ma japësh pak kripën, të lutem?*

*He drove his knife through the top of one of the bean cans, sawed out the top and passed **the can** to Lennie. / Ai rrasi thikën tek kreu i njëres prej konservave, preu kapakun dhe i kaloi **kutinë** Lenit.*

*A few miles south of Soledad, the Salinas river drops in close to the hillside bank and runs deep and green. **The water** is warm too, for it has slipped twinkling over the yellow sands in the sunlight before reaching the narrow pool. / Pak milje në jug të Soledadit, rrëzë një kodre rrjedh i thellë dhe i gjelbër lumi Salinas. **Uji** i tij është i ngrohtë, sepse para se të arrijë bunacën e ngushtë, ka rrëshqitur me rrëmbim nëpër ranishtet e verdha dhe të nxehta.*

Situational reference based on the larger situation (relying on shared knowledge, on both the speaker/hearer's side) is present, for example, in:

the letterbox / kutia e postës (for the same family members)

the President/prezidenti (one country)

*You can remember this place, can't you? **The ranch** is about a quarter of mile that way. / Mund ta mbash mend vendin, apo jo? **Rançoja** është rreth një çerek milje më tutje.*

*Don't make no mistake about that. He is **the boss's son**. / Se mos bësh ndonjë gabim. Ai është **i biri i bosit**.*

English and Albanian examples totally overlap in the cases shown above. In other words, a noun expressing definite situational reference based on the immediate situation in English and accordingly preceded by the definite article is matched in Albanian by a noun with a definite form, as in *the can / kutinë, the water / uji*.

Definite Albanian forms also appear in cases in which the nouns in English and Albanian show definite situational reference based on the larger situation (where the referent is not immediately present but where the speaker and the hearer share knowledge which makes the referent clearly identifiable). It is exemplified above by both translations into Albanian using definite forms: *the ranch / rançoja* and *the boss's son / i biri i bosit*.

The next subtype of definite reference is anaphoric reference. Anaphoric reference describes situations in which the referent is already known to both, the speaker and the hearer from some previous context. In examples, such as *She was holding a white orchid. The flower was splendid. / Mbante në dorë një orkide të bardhë. Lulja ishte mahnitëse*, the noun *white orchid / një orkide e bardhë* first appears with an indefinite article (*një* + indefinite form in the Albanian translation).

When the flower is mentioned for the second time, though, the noun *the flower / lulja* appears with the definite form in Albanian.

The examples below are further illustrations of anaphoric reference.

*A powerful, big-stomached man came into the bunkhouse. His head still dripped water from the scrubbing and dousing. - Hi, Slim, - he said, and then stopped and stared at George and Lennie. - These guys just come, - said Slim by way of introduction. - Glad to meet ya – **the big** man said. /*

Një burrë barkalec, i fuqishëm hyri në kapanon. Koka i pikonte ende nga larja. Ej, Slim, - tha.

Pastaj ai ndali dhe kundroi Xhorxhin dhe Lenin.

Këta sapo kanë ardhur, - tha Slimi si për t' i paraqitur.

*Gëzohem! - tha **burri** i fuqishëm.*

*A water snake glided smoothly up the pool, twisting its periscope head from side to side; and it swam the length of the pool and came to the legs of a motionless heron that stood in the shallows. A silent head and a beak lanced down and plucked it out by the head, and the beak swallowed **the little snake** while its tail waved frantically. / Një gjarpër uji rrëshqiti pa zhurmë nëpër ujë, duke tundur kokën si periskop, sa andej-këndej; përshkoi gjithë gjatësinë e bunacës, gjer tek këmbët e një çafke të palëvizshme, që rrinte në vah. Një sqep u lëshua si shigjetë dhe e rrëmbeu gjarpërin nga koka; sqepi gëlltiste **gjarprin e vogël** ndërsa bishti i tij përpëlitej.*

The examples illustrating anaphoric reference appeared in both languages with definite nouns. In the cases extracted from the novel, the noun in both sentences while mentioned for the first time appears with an indefinite article/form. When it appears for the second time, it is already known to the reader, therefore the noun becomes definite. This is valid for both, English and Albanian, as in:

aman / një burrë – the man/burri

a water snake/një gjarpër uji – the little snake/ gjarprin e vogël

Third subtype in our analysis is associative reference. Associative reference is also called indirect anaphora as it links together items that are specifically related in a particular situation, such as: *kitchen / kuzhina: the cooker / soba, the fridge / frigoriferi, the sink / lavapjati, the floor / dyshemeja*, etc. We find associative reference also in cases, such as: *We wanted to buy a flat, so we went to see it first. The walls were freshly painted and the windows cleaned. / Donim të blinim një shtëpi, prandaj shkuam ta shikojmë së pari. Muret ishin të porsa lyer dhe dritaret ishin të pastra.*

In the examined texts, these following examples were found:

***The bunkhouse** was a long rectangular building. Inside, **the walls** were whitewashed and the floor unpainted. / **Kapanoni** ishte një ndërtesë drejtkëndëshe e gjatë. **Muret** nga brenda qenë lyer me gëlqere, ndërsa dyshemeja jo.*

*On the sandy bank under the trees **the leaves** lie deep and so crisp that a lizard makes a great skittering if he runs among them. / Në bregun ranor, nën pemë, **gjethet** janë të futura thellë dhe janë kaq të thara, saqë zvarranikët bëjnë një fërfërimë të madhe, kur shkasin midis tyre.*

Also indirect anaphora seems to have the same effect on English and Albanian nouns, i.e. the noun that is somehow associated with an entity previously presented in the text tends to appear with the definite article/form. Therefore, the example, *the bunkhouse / kapononi – the walls / muret* appears with the definite article in English and with a definite form in Albanian. The second example, though: *pemë/the trees – gjethet/the leaves* has a definite article/form for both, Albanian and its English counterpart in the second word, the first word *pemë/trees* remains indefinite in Albanian due to the presence of the prepositional accusative construction *nën/below*, which is not developed any further.

The next subtype of definite reference to be discussed in more detail is so-called sporadic reference. Sporadic reference is used with institutions which may occur at regular intervals or only in a few places, in other words sporadically, as in: *They went to the cinema/the theatre twice a week. / Shkonin në kinema/teatër dy herë në javë.*

In the examined parallel texts, we found the following examples:

*I met a guy an' he was in pitchers. Went out to the Riverside Dance Palace with him. He says he was gonna put me in **the movies**. Says I was natural. / Mua më janë joshur të luaj teatër. Dhe jo vetëm në një. Madje njeri më tha se do të më merrte **në kinematografi**....*

*An' I could sat in **them big hotels** an' had pitchers took of me. / Do të rrija në ato **hotelet e mëdha** e do më bënin fotografi të ndryshme.*

Sporadic reference in the examples given above appears to be expressed by a definite noun in both languages. However, there is one exception in the Albanian (already explained in the theoretical part). When in the accusative case, Albanian nouns appear with an indefinite form if they are preceded by the preposition *në – in* if the noun is not further developed, e.g., by a restrictive clause, participle, etc. In our analysis, we also encountered such a case, *in the movies / në kinematografi*, therefore the noun that follows the preposition appears with an indefinite form. Had it been otherwise, though, i.e. if the *në* preposition was not there, the noun in the given context would have appeared with a definite form.

The logical use of the definite article *the* resulting in definite reference is mostly based on the meaning of certain adjectives and postdeterminers, such as ordinals (*the first / i pari, the next / tjetri, the last / i fundit*), which make the head noun unique. The examples in the parallel texts are:

***The first man** was small and quick, dark of face, with restless eyes and sharp, strong features. /*

Burri i parë qe trupvogël dhe i shpejtë, zeshkan e me sy të lëvizsshëm, me tipare të mprehta e të theksuara. / *The young man turned to **the back of the magazine**, put it down on the table and pointed with his finger. / Burri i ri e hapi te **faqja e fundit**, e vuri mbi tavolinë dhe tregoi me gisht.*

In both languages, the nouns in the examples appear with the definite article/form. In Albanian, the ordinal following the noun in the first example *the first man / burri i parë* has an indefinite form. If the word order was reversed, i.e. if the sequence ordinal+noun (which is also a possible combination in Albanian, but slightly archaic and/or context-dependent) was used instead of noun+ordinal, then the definite form would be on the numeral and the noun would appear indefinite, as in *i pari burrë – the first of man*. In the second example *the back of the magazine/faqja e fundit* (lit. *the last page*), both, the noun and the ordinal appeared with a definite form.

Presumably the reason for the differences in the distribution of in/definite forms is that in both cases we are dealing with different parts of speech. *I parë* is an ordinal numeral proper and it behaves more as a postposed adjective in Albanian (see 1.3.3), as in *i/e ngrohtë / warm, i/e ftohtë / cold*, etc., therefore as in the above mentioned adjectives, it can change the word order in a noun phrase and produce a slightly different meaning or/and archaic connotation. It can also show gender by means of the preposed particle *i*-masc., *e*-fem. This is not the case in the second example, where we have two nouns linked together by a genitive case. In this construction, the head noun is *faqja / the page* and the genitive is *fundi / the end* linked to the head noun by the linker *e*. In this case, the connecting particle also shows the gender of the head noun, but not the gender of the noun in the genitive case. Therefore the feminine noun *faqja / page* requires the *e / of – fem.* particle, whereas *fundi / the end* is masculine. In the event of reversing the word order, as we saw in the first example, the distribution of in/definiteness within the noun phrase changes, as in:

e fundit (def.) *faqe* (indef.) / *the last of page(s)*.

Another logical use of the definite article in English occurs in connection with superlatives (*the tallest/më i gjati, the best/më i miri*). Examples in the texts:

*She slang her pups last night, - said Slim. - Nine o' them. I drowned four o' them right off. She couldn't feed that many. - Got five left, huh? -Yeah, five. I kept **the biggest**. / Poli lindi mbrëmë, - tha Slimi. - Nëntë këlyshë. Katër prej tyre i mbyta menjëherë. S'mund t'i ushqente kaq shumë. Të mbetën pesë, ë? Po, pesë. Ruajta **më të mëdhenjtë**.*

*I herded sheep with him. - He said proudly, - You wouldn't think it to look at him now, but he was **the best damn sheep dog** I ever seen. / Ruanim delet bashkë. Pastaj tha me krenari: Vështirë ta besoni kështu si është katandisur, por ai ishte **qeni më i mirë i stanit** që kam parë.*

In both of these examples the English and Albanian nouns have a definite form. In the first example,

the biggest (puppies) / më të mëdhenjtë, where the Albanian noun is in fact an adjective converted into a noun, nonetheless it still appears with a definite form in postposition.

The second case *the best sheep dog / qeni më i mirë* shows clearly that the adjective in the superlative has an indefinite form, whereas the noun *qeni – the dog* appears with a definite form. In an inverse word order with a slightly different and/or archaic connotation, the definite form would shift towards the adjectival form and the noun would become indefinite, as in *më i miri (def.) qen (indef.) / the best of dogs*. The English translation indicates that inversion also involves a slight shift in meaning.

The last point to be discussed under the logical use of the definite article is the combination of nouns with the adjectives of the type *the same/i njëjti, the only/i vetmi*. For instance:

They was always near me, always there. Used to sleep right in the same room, right in the same bed' all three. / Gjithmonë rrinim tok. Flinim në të njëjtën dhomë, në të njëjtin krevat, që të tre. So he reaches out to feel that red dress and the girl lets out a squawk, an' that gets Lennie all mixed up and he holds on 'cause that's the only thing he can think to do. / Sakaq Leni u hutua dhe e mbërtheu më fort, sepse kjo ishte e vetmja gjë që i erdhi në mend.

All the English examples occur with the definite article before the noun phrase. In Albanian, all the cases show the definite form on the adjective, as in *në të njëjtën (adj., def.) dhomë (noun, ind.)/in the same room; në të njëjtin (adj. ind.) krevat (noun, indef.)/in the same bed; e vetmja (adj. def.) gjë (noun, ind.)/the only thing*.

However, these examples could also appear in Albanian with an adjective in postposition with a change in the distribution of in/definite forms. A slight change in meaning is also involved: *në dhomën (def.) e njëjtë (indef.) / in the same room, në krevatin (def.) e njëjtë (indef.)/in the same bed, gjëja (def.) e vetme (indef.)/the same thing*. All three examples with a reversed word order and a postposed adjective have nouns in a definite form and adjectives in an indefinite form. These cases apparently follow specific rules, two definite forms, one in the adjective and the other in the noun, cannot occur side by side in Albanian. It is as if Albanian tends to avoid the co-occurrence of two definite reference markers of a certain type and in certain positions within the same noun phrase (cf. section 2.2.1.3).

The next subtype examined in the parallel texts is definite reference due to the extension of the NP. Definite reference (cataphoric or anaphoric) due to modification occurs wherever the addition of the modifying element results in identifiability or inclusive (unique) reference. When the use of the modifier does not have such an effect, the noun takes the indefinite article, especially in cases implying the existence of more than one possible referent of the extended NP, for instance when a relative clause is used as a postmodifier:

She carried a bag that was too heavy for her / Mbante një çantë e cila ishte tepër e rëndë për të.

Slowly, like a terrier who doesn't want to bring a ball to its master, Lennie approached, drew back, approached again. / Ngadalë si zagari që s'do t'ia sjellë topin të zotit, Leni u avit, u tërhoq, u afrua sërish.

The example from the parallel texts is interesting in that the head noun *a terrier* is indefinite in English, but it has a definite form in its Albanian translation *zagari*.

There are six frequent types of postmodification in English that make the referent specific, or restrict its reference enough to make it unambiguously identifiable (or unique) for the hearer, and so require the use of the definite article. These postmodifying elements include:

a) the restrictive relative clause, as in:

I loved the opera that we saw last night / Opera që pamë mbrëmë më pëlqeu shumë.

You remember Andy Cushman, Lennie? Went to grammar school? - The one that his old lady used to make hot cakes for the kids? - Lennie asked. / - Të kujtohet Andi Kushman, Leni? Vinim bashkë në fillore? - Ai/Andi që na jepte nga ëmbëlsirat që i gatuate mamaja? - pyeti Leni.

In this particular example, the Albanian translation uses the pronoun *ai / he* instead of *the one* in the original. This is because Albanian does not employ the same means of reference in this particular case; alternatively it can repeat once again the proper name *Andi* (as shown above) that comes in a definite form as its English counterpart *the one*.

b) the infinitive, as in: *The one to read the poem was Jack. / Xhaku që ai që pati për të lexuar vjershën.* Unfortunately, there were no examples found in the Steinbeck parallel texts to illustrate this type of postmodification, and so we give one from the Marcuse text: *whose existence once embodied the opposition to the system as a whole / ekzistenca e të cilave mishëronte dikur opozitën ndaj sistemit si një i tërë.*

c) the participle, as in the noun phrase: *in the text written above / në tekstin e shkruajtur më sipër (në tekstin e mësipërm).* There is one example in the Steinbeck parallel texts of the English noun postmodified by a restrictive clause whose Albanian equivalent is postmodified by a participle:

Slim sat down across the table from George. He studied the solitaire hand that was upside down to him. / Slimi u ul mbi një arkë pranë tavolinës, përballë Xhorxhit. Ndiqte lojën e hapur përballë tij.

The translation of *the solitaire man that...* *lojën e hapur para tij* somewhat differs from the original. Literally, the Albanian translation says: *Slim sat down across the table from George. He was following the game opened in front of him.* Nonetheless, both head nouns *the ...man* and *lojën* are sufficiently specified by the postmodifying element to require a definite reference marker.

Another interesting example is in the Marcuse texts with a premodifying participle in English

translated by a postmodifying participle in Albanian: *within the established society / brenda shoqërisë së konsoliduar*.

d) the prepositional phrase, as in: *I saw it in the bookshop on the corner of the street / E pashë në librari në cep të rrugës*. As there is no suitable example in the Steinbeck translation, we use one from the Marcuse texts: *In the United States, one notices the collusion and alliance between business and organized labor / Në Shtetet e Bashkuara vërehen marrëveshje të fshehta dhe aleanca midis botës së biznesit dhe punëtorisë së organizuar*. Both, *the United States* and *Shtetet e Bashkuara* appear with a definite article/form.

e) the *of*-phrase, which is a very frequent type of postmodification. Examples: *the bottom of the sea / fundi i detit, the pages of the books / faqet e librit*, etc. There are many authentic examples in the Steinbeck texts:

*No mess at all, and when the end of the month come I could take my fifty bucks and go into town and get whatever I want. / Dhe kur të vinte **fundi i muajit**, do fusja në xhep pesëdhjetë dollarët dhe do shkoja në një...shtëpi zoqash....*

*On one side of the river the golden foothill slopes curve up to the strong and rocky Gabilan mountains, but on the valley side the water is lined with trees' willows fresh and green with every spring.../ Nga **njëra anë e lumit**, shpatet e praruara të rrëzëkodrës, dredhojnë drejt maleve të ashpra e shkëmbore të Gabilanit, kurse në anën e luginës, uji qerthullohet me pemë, shelgje të njomë e të blertë në çdo pranverë...*

The two examples, *the end of the month / fundi i muajit, on one side of the river / nga njëra anë e lumit* have the definite article/form in both English and Albanian. In *fundi i muajit*, we find two nouns, both with a definite form in Albanian. The case of *nga njëra anë e lumit*, however, is different in that the first noun *anë* (fem.) is indefinite as it is preceded by the definite adjective *njëra*. The second noun has a definite genitive form. Generally, though, both nouns in the postmodifying genitive construction tend to have definite forms.

Sometimes the *of*-phrase postmodification can also appear with a head noun preceded by the indefinite article, as in: *a page of the book / një faqe e librit* (compared to *the title page of the book / faqja e parë e librit*). The obvious reason is to show that it is one of many pages in the book whereas the title page is only one.

f) postmodification of the head noun by an attributive clause. This kind of definite reference, as other types of postmodifications, can be seen as cataphoric, but in this case the reference is always definite, as in: *The fact that he won the tournament once does not make him an eternal winner / Fakti që e fitoi ndeshjen një herë nuk do të thotë që do të fitojë gjithnjë*. The attributive clause is alternatively regarded as an appositive *that*-clause – the head noun and the clause are

coreferential (cf. CGEL) – and apposition is seen as another source of definite reference.

Definite reference on the basis of apposition appears with restrictive appositive constructions, such as *the number eight / numri (def.) tetë, the name Jack / emri (def.) Jack, the river Thames / lumi (def.) Thames*. Another type of restrictive apposition is that with *of*-phrases, as in *the month of December / në muajin (def.) e dhjetorit, the City of London / qyteti (def.) i Londrës*, etc.

In all these examples, Albanian counterparts to the English nouns always have a definite form.

Finally, definite reference due to premodification appears in cases when the premodifier indicates the only possible referent, i.e. uniqueness, or serves to unambiguously identify the head noun, as in the following examples: *I like the red vase / Më pëlqen vazoja e kuqe; What is the right time? / Cila është koha e përshtatshme?; the only exception/përjashtimi i vetëm (i vetmi përjashtim); the same man/i njëjti njeri (njeriu i njëjtë); the very classes / pikërisht klasat*. A sentential example from the Steinbeck texts:

*So he reaches out to feel that red dress and the girl lets out a squawk, an' that gets Lennie all mixed up and he holds on 'cause that's **the only thing** he can think to do. / Sakaq Leni u hutua dhe e mbërtheu më fort, sepse kjo ishte **e vetmja gjë** që i erdhi në mend.*

Here, both *the only thing* and *e vetmja gjë* appear with the definite article/form.

To sum up, the findings of the analysis of common nouns in respect of non-generic definite reference in English and Albanian parallel texts can basically be divided into two areas: A. overlapping uses in both systems and B. different uses of definite reference markers.

A. Overlapping uses. As the illustrative examples indicate, both English and Albanian nouns appear with definite articles/forms in the following cases: (1) when the noun has situational reference which can be based on the immediate and larger situation; (2) when the noun is specified by direct anaphora. (The first mention is always indefinite, i.e. with an indefinite article/form. The second mention, on the other hand, appears with the definite article/form.); (3) when specified by associative anaphora: the test with associative anaphora showed that both languages behave in the same way – i.e. in both of them nouns specified through indirect anaphora appear with a definite form/article; (4) with sporadic reference which, too, is in both languages marked by a definite form/article. The only exception seems to be when the Albanian noun in the accusative is preceded by the preposition *në/on, in*; in such a case the noun takes an indefinite form. This is an instance commonly described in the literature and mentioned in the theoretical part. In fact, Albanian nouns in the accusative when preceded by the preposition *në* invariably take the indefinite form, unless they are expanded by a noun phrase or another type of modifier.

Next, in what is called (5) the logical use of *the* in English with definite reference due to the meaning of some numerals, postdeterminers, and premodifying adjectives, making the head unique,

we observed the following:

The ordinal numerals affect the noun phrase in such a way that it has a tendency to appear with a definite form/article in both languages. It is a fact, though, that the way the two languages tend to use the marker of definiteness varies. The difference is discussed in section B below.

The use of a definite form/article with the superlatives also appears to be the same in both languages. As with the ordinal numerals, however, the distribution of the definite forms/articles is not with exactly the same nominal parts of speech in the NP. Further discussion is provided below

Another point concerning the logical use of the English *the* in our analysis was the combination of nouns with a certain type of adjectives, such as *same*, *only*. Judging from the examples we could compare, once again the whole noun phrase becomes definite, despite the fact that definiteness is not marked on exactly the same parts of speech within the NP in the two languages.

In addition to the effects of premodification, the analysis compared the English and the Albanian system as to the effects of definite reference due to the postmodification of the NP. English grammars describe several ways in which the NP can be expanded by a postmodifier, dependent clause, prepositional phrase, participle, etc., and by apposition.

Examples of nouns that were expanded by a postmodifier, such as the relative clause, appeared with a definite form/article in both languages. There were some minor differences caused by the translation into Albanian, but the rewording of the translation showed clearly that the noun in question could appear with a definite form as well. This is true of all the types of postmodification that were covered in the examples from the source-translation texts, namely the infinitive, the participle and the prepositional phrase. English nouns that were thus postmodified appeared with the definite article and all their Albanian translations used definite forms. Similarly, restrictive apposition leads to the use of definite forms in Albanian. The only type of postmodification in which slight differences are found is the one analogous to the English *of*-phrase.

B. Differing uses. The area where the English and the Albanian uses of definite articles/forms differ includes the following cases:

One of the major differences between the two systems is that unlike in English, Albanian common nouns with definite reference may, in addition to their definite ending, take another determiner. For instance, we can find examples of definite nouns with possessive pronouns, as in *shoku i saj* / *her the friend.

The Albanian noun which already has a definite ending may for some reason, also take the relative pronoun as another determiner. From the formal point of view, it has to be noted that the head noun can be either definite or indefinite; the relative pronoun, on the other hand, is always in a definite form, as in: *vajza e cila* / the girl *the which, *vajzë e cila* / a girl *the which.

In cases where ordinals and adjectives are involved, Albanian shows an interesting behaviour. If the adjective/ordinal numeral is postposed, it usually tends to be indefinite, whereas the noun that precedes it can be definite as in *libri i pare / the first book, dimri i ftohtë/the cold winter*. On the other hand, if the adjective/ordinal precedes a noun with an indefinite form, it has to be definite. The meaning of such a noun phrase is context-dependent and/or implies archaic connotation. So, we can have examples, such as *i pari libër / the first of books* or *i ftohti dimër / the cold winter*.

An interesting and certainly unusual case is the co-occurrence of two Albanian nouns, one of which is in the genitive case, as in *vëllai i nënës / the mother's brother, the brother of the mother*. In these particular cases, both nouns can appear in a definite form. If we compare the adjectival and numeral constructions with the genitival ones, it is clear at first sight that they all have a connecting particle, which, however, does not work the same way for all the cases in question for two reasons.

First, it is because, unlike in cases with ordinal numerals and adjectives, when a noun appears in the genitive construction, reverse word order is not possible. Secondly, the connecting particle, despite its seeming similarity has a crucial role when it comes to the display of the gender. In the examples where the numeral and the adjective are involved, it shows the gender of the head noun they are attached to. In cases where two nouns are involved, one as the head and the other as a genitive form modifier, the gender displayed belongs to the head noun and not to the dependent noun, e.g. *vajza (fem.) e vëllait (masc.)/the brother's daughter*.

2.2.1.2 Albanian common nouns with generic reference

The next part of the empirical investigation of common nouns deals with the generic use of common nouns and the role of the definite form. Despite the fact that the aim of the work is a comparison of definiteness and its expression in the two languages it seemed appropriate to include a section on the role of the English definite article in expressing generic reference and examine its translation into Albanian. Having included generic reference as such, it was decided to cover other determiners used with generic reference to see how the correlation between the two languages works. The idea was to find out how the generic uses of the indefinite article and zero in English are actually translated into Albanian to complete the picture of generic reference marking in Albanian.

This research is based on an elicitation technique of data collection from native speakers of Albanian. A group of Albanian native speakers were given a set of English sentences gathered from various English grammars. The sentences include nouns with all types of determination used to express generic meaning (*the, a* and zero with abstracts and plurals). They were presented without a context as prototypical generic sentences are self-contained. Generic reference is the function of the whole sentence which is characterized by special features such as the neutralization of the

number in the noun, the atemporal present, certain categories of the noun, etc (see below).

The group of informants consisted of 5 persons (2 males, 3 females), aged between 25 and 40. All of them are university educated (2 of them studied in Albania, 3 abroad); all were born in Albania (not Kosovo) and none of them belongs to an Albanian minority resident in the states sharing borders with Albania. All of them live permanently in Albania and have Albanian as their first language. As far as English is concerned, they are all EFL speakers, none of them is bilingual. However, the requirement was that they are fluent and confident in English. These speakers were asked to translate the selected Albanian examples intuitively into English.

The test set is comprised of the following 10 English sentences (and their four variants):

(1a, b) *The cat is not a reliable animal. / Cats are not reliable animals.*

(2a, b) *The book is a strong influence in our social lives. / A(ny) book is a strong influence in our social lives.*

(3) *I need a hammer.*

(4) *Minerals rarely occur singly.*

(5a, b) *It is a perfect place for youngsters. / It is a perfect place for the youngsters.*

(6a, b) *Airlines are cheaper than they used to be. / The airlines are cheaper than they used to be.*

(7) *The poor are generally looked down at.*

(8) *I drink coffee.*

(9) *Woman is supposed to stay at home.*

(10) *Modesty is rare these days.*

The test includes examples with sentences in which the common noun used with a generic sense shows: (1) neutralization of the number; (2) cases in which the definite article *the* can be interchangeable by *any*; (3) cases in which *a* might be read as *any*; (4) types/classes of people, animals, plants, minerals, etc., but also technical and cultural products; (5) the plural with a generic function that can sometimes be accompanied by the definite article refers to a subgroup; (6) use or nonuse of the article with generic reference as a preference of the speaker; (7) grammatical conversion that requires an article; (8) generic reference with a zero article; (9) cases in which both words *man/woman* are treated as count nouns; (10) non-count nouns with generic reference (appearing with a zero article).

In general, there is a strong agreement between the informants in their translation of English generic sentences. The data collected from the 5 informants are given in Table 28:

Table 28: Agreement among Albanian speakers translating generic sentences from English

	determiner-NP	generic sentence	Albanian translation		total
			definite	indefinite	
1	<i>the</i> – sg NP	1a, 2a	10	0	10
2	<i>the</i> – pl NP	5b, 6b	10	0	10
3	<i>the</i> – collective NP	7	5	0	5
4	<i>a(n)</i> – NP-Subject	2b	5	0	5
5	<i>a(n)</i> – NP-Object	3	0	5	5
6	zero – pl NP	1b, 4, 5a, 6a	20	0	20
7	zero – noncount NP	8, 10	10	0	10
8	zero – count NP	9	5	0	5
	total of answers		65	5	70

The table shows (a) the degree to which the Albanian speakers agreed in their translations, and (b) the way English generic sentences were translated into Albanian in terms of their determiners. The degree of agreement among the five Albanian respondents in their answers to the 14 test sentences (including variants) is expressed for each of the 8 determiner-NP combinations by means of a scale from total agreement (no different translation), partial disagreement to total disagreement (half-and-half difference in translation). We can see that there was total agreement in the translation in combinations listed above. All the respondents translated by a definite form into Albanian the following English combinations: *the*+sg NP, *the*+pl NP, *the*+collective NP, *a(n)*+NP subject, zero+pl NP, zero+noncount NP and zero+count NP. Similarly, all of them translated by an indefinite form the *a(n)*+NP object English combination.

The English generic definite article with the singular noun was translated into Albanian using a singular noun in definite form by four of the five speakers with one exception. One of the informants preferred to translate the singular English noun with the definite article by a plural noun in definite form:

The cat is not a reliable animal. / Macja (sg.) nuk është kafshë besnike or Macet (pl.) nuk janë kafshë besnike.

The book is a strong influence in our social lives. / Libri (sg.) ka ndikim të madh në jetën shoqërore or Librat (pl.) kanë ndikim të madh në jetën shoqërore.

The English generic indefinite article was translated into Albanian by a singular noun in the definite form by all the informants without exceptions:

A book is a strong influence in our social lives. / Libri ka ndikim të madh në jetën tonë shoqërore.

English plural nouns with generic reference preceded by the zero article were translated using the definite plural form by all the informants:

Cats are not reliable animals. / Macet nuk janë kafshë besnike.

Minerals rarely occur singly. / Mineralet gjenden rrallë të vetmuar.

It is a perfect place for youngsters. / Ky është vend i përkryer për të rinjtë

Airlines are cheaper than they used to be. / Aerolinjat kushtojnë më pak se më parë.

English generic sentences with plural nouns preceded by the definite article (a rather rare and widely disputed usage in English, included only as a matter of interest) were translated into Albanian by plural nouns with a definite form by all the informants without an exception:

It is a perfect place for the youngsters. / Ky është vend i përkryer për të rinjtë.

The airlines are cheaper than they used to be. / Aerolinjat kushtojnë më shumë se më parë.

In these cases, the generic reference in English is limited. Thus while, *It is a perfect place for youngsters* refers to the whole class of young persons, i.e. *It is a perfect place for the youngsters* refers only to a subclass of young persons living in this place. In Albanian, this is not the case, as both examples were translated into Albanian by a definite plural form.

In English we can test for generic reference by checking whether it is possible to replace the singular by the plural, i.e. whether the number is neutralized, as in: *The/A child* learns from his parents vs. *Children* learn from their parents. Sometimes, though, the interchangeability of *a, the* and the plural is not possible. The greatest restriction on use seems to apply to the indefinite article (expressing an arbitrary specimen rather than the whole class). This is why sentences such as *The lion / Lions* is/are numerous in these parts cannot be changed into **A lion* is numerous in these parts.

The combination of a(n) + NP object, on the other hand, appeared with an indefinite form in the Albanian translation without any exception: *I need a hammer/Më duhet çekan.*

In Albanian, the test of the variability in number is also valid: *Fëmija* mëson nga prindërit e tij. / *A/The child* learns from his parents. vs. *Fëmijtë* mësojnë nga prindërit e tyre. (*A child* learns/*The children* learn from their parents). As in English, the greatest restrictions apply to Albanian indefinite forms in the singular; they tend to mark generic reference very rarely. Accordingly, the following sentence with an indefinite form of the noun is not possible:

**Një luan* është kafshë e shpeshtë në këtë ambient / *A lion* is a rare animal in this environment
unlike

Luani është kafshë e shpeshtë në këtë ambient / *The lion* is a rare animal in this environment

Luenjtë janë kafshë të shpeshta në këtë ambient / *The lions* are rare animals in this environment

Albanian would not use a noun with an indefinite singular form to express generic reference.

The plural, on the other hand, when used with generic reference, is always definite in Albanian. The indefinite plural could not be possibly used with generic reference at all.

In English, the list of verbs/predicates which do not allow the occurrence of the indefinite generic article given by most of the grammars includes examples, such as: *abound, be rare, increase/decrease, scatter, collect*, etc. Also in cases where the indefinite article *a* could very easily take the meaning of *any*, as in: *The book, the play, the film are strong influences in our social life.* the generic *a* is not used. On the other hand, all these examples can have a generic plural, as in *Books, plays and films are strong influences in our social life.* Similarly, in Albanian we can encounter examples such as *Libri/pjesa teatrale/filmi ka influencë të madhe në jetën tonë shoqërore. / The book, the play, the film are strong influences in our social life.* It is likewise possible to have the plural with generic reference, as in *Librat/Pjesët teatrale/Filmat kanë influencë të madhe në jetën tonë shoqërore. / The books, plays and films are strong influences in our social life.*

A number of English grammars mention that the plural preceded by a zero article has the highest occurrence when used with generic reference. Generic reference appears very often with different types/classes of people, animals, plants, minerals, etc., but also with technical and cultural products, as in: *Modern psychologists generally favor an experimental approach. Minerals rarely occur singly. Don't judge by appearances.*

In Albanian, on the other hand, the noun always has either a definite or an indefinite form, therefore it cannot appear without a marker of in/definiteness. Plural nouns that appear to express generic reference are definite, as in *Psikologët modernë janë shpesh në favor të një metode eksperimentale. / Modern psychologists generally favor an experimental approach; Mineralet gjenden të vetmuar rrallëherë. / Minerals rarely occur singly; Mos gjyko nga pamja. / Don't judge by appearances.* The word *appearances* is in Albanian translated by a definite noun in singular.

Sometimes in English, the use or non-use of the article with generic reference can be a matter of preference of the speaker, as in *Airlines charge too much* (meaning airlines in general), vs. *The airlines charge too much* (as opposed to e.g. bus companies). It is impossible to make this distinction in Albanian, as the plural noun would be always used in definite form when marking generic reference.

In cases like *the poor, the rich* where the adjective is converted into a generic collective noun, the definite article is required as a morphological means of nominalization. In Albanian, these nouns tend to be used with a preposed element (article or particle) which, as has been mentioned, in the theoretical part, does not always signal definiteness. Rather than by a preposed element, the information about in/definiteness is carried by a postposed marker even in the converted Albanian nouns, i.e. it is marked by the ending of the noun in question, as in *të varfërit/ the poor, të pasurit/*

the rich, etc. This was also how the generic sentence with *the poor* in the elicitation test was translated by all the Albanian speakers: *The poor are generally looked down at.* / *Në përgjithësi të varfërit shikohen me përbuzje.*

Where the articles *a* and *the* can alternate, i.e. one can replace the other in generic function in English, there is a slight stylistic difference in their use. While *a* is used more often in the spoken language and refers to any member of the class in question, *the*, on the other hand, is more formal and refers to a typical member of a particular group. This stylistic difference does not exist in Albanian.

Occasionally, the generic reference of singular countable nouns can be signalled by a zero article in English. The generic sentence in the elicitation test was translated by all of the Albanian respondents using the definite form of the noun. However, one of them decided to use the plural instead of the singular form of the noun: *Woman is supposed to stay at home.* / *Gruaja (sg.) qëndron në shtëpi. or Gratë (pl.) qëndrojnë në shtëpi.*

Another such word in English is *man* as in *In history, man has adapted his environment to his nature* (man as a species). Both *woman* and *man* with a zero article can be used generically also with a modifier, e.g. *prehistoric man, Stone Age man, civilized man and the Neanderthal man*. In this respect, *man* and *woman* behave like proper names (and may even be capitalized). On the other hand, both *man* and *woman* are frequently treated as ordinary count nouns. Used generically in the plural or singular they do not refer to mankind or womankind, but to male or female adults: *Women do not get equal pay for equal work; A hysterical woman is bad enough, but a hysterical man is insufferable*. Sometimes, though, it is important to differentiate between *man* (as a species) and *a man* (meaning a person, a human being, especially in the spoken language), as in: *What is a man (a chap, a fellow, a girl) to do in a case like that!*

In Albanian all the above cases would be used with a definite form, e.g. *Në histori, njeriu ia ka përshtatur ambientin naturës së tij*. Likewise the nouns corresponding English nouns with modifiers would be definite in Albanian, e.g., *njeriu prehistorik, njeriu i epokës së gurit, njeriu i civilizuar, njeriu Neandertal*. The distinction between the word *man* representing humankind and *man* as opposed to *woman* is not made in Albanian. Instead the words *njeri/u – man* (human) – and *burrë/i – man* as opposed to *woman* – are used in Albanian.

However, although it has different words for *man* as opposed to *woman* and *man* standing for mankind, Albanian requires the use of definite form in generic reference for both, e.g. *Burri është ai që e fiton lekun.* / *The man is the one who earns money* as opposed to *Gratë nuk paguhen njëllonj për të njëjtën punë.* / *Women do not get an equal pay for equal work.* vs. *Një grua hysterike është mjaft e keqe, por një burrë hysterik është i padurueshëm.* - *A hysterical woman is bad enough, but a hysterical man is insufferable*. In this case, Albanian usage very much resembles English usage as

the noun appears with an indefinite singular form.

Finally, English non-count nouns with generic reference like count nouns in the plural are used with a zero article. The generic sentences of this type in the elicitation test were translated by all of the Albanian speakers using the indefinite form of the noun:

*Modesty is rare these days / **Thjeshhtësia** është veti e rrallë sot
I drink coffee. / **Pi** kafe.*

Analogous examples of non-count nouns in Albanian with generic reference used with a definite form are:

***Plumbi** thith rrezatimin / **Lead** absorbs radiation;
Gjaku është më i trashë se uji / **Blood** is thicker than water
Energjia elektrike u përdor për herë të parë vetëm për ndriçim / **Electricity** was first used for
lighting
Kërkimi shkencor nuk synon për rezultate të menjëhershme / **Scientific research** does not aim to
provide immediate results*

Also the Albanian counterparts to English converted abstract non-count nouns which require the use of the definite article (as a marker of substantivization), e.g. *the grotesque (is always fascinating), the rare*, etc., are translated by means of the definite form.

To sum up, the way in which generic reference is marked in Albanian differs in several aspects from its expression in English. This is especially true for nouns in the plural and non-count nouns. In English, they are used without an article, in Albanian, both plural and non-count nouns need to have a definite form when they express generic reference. The definite form also occurs with Albanian count nouns in the singular when they express generic reference, which is the only use in which Albanian agrees with English, as an example from the Marcuse texts nicely shows: *This kind of masterly enslavement is not essentially different from that of **the** typist, **the** bank teller, **the** high-pressure salesman or saleswoman, and **the** television announcer. / Ky tip i skllavërimit mjesh tëror në thelb nuk është i ndryshëm nga ai i **daktilografistes**, i **arkëtarit** të bankës, i **shitësit** apo shitëses që punon nën trysni të lartë dhe i **folësit** në televizion.* However, English singular count nouns with generic reference may also appear with the indefinite article while Albanian generic singular count nouns take only the definite form in a subject position and the indefinite form in an object position.

2.2.2 Albanian proper names and in/definiteness

The starting point for this part of the analysis is the survey of English proper names (both one- and multi-word), with the definite article that mostly derives from the survey in 1.4.4. Since the survey does not exhaust all the possible occurrences of the combination definite article + proper noun/name in English, some additional information (categories), will be added from the general onomastic overview in 1.4.3 (see also Table 29). This part of the research rests on the evidence in the corpus created for the purposes of this study and from additional sources on the Internet. The procedure is to collect examples of Albanian proper nouns and to show how they are used in terms of definiteness in comparison to their English counterparts. We start with the English proper names used with *the* as described in English grammars and collate them with Albanian proper nouns (wherever possible).

The comparison will first take place outside a context and next within a particular context. English proper names with the definite article serve as an indicator of where in the system of proper names the occurrence of the definite article can be expected. By checking their Albanian counterparts we hope to show similarities and/or discrepancies in the use of articles/definite forms with proper names in the two languages.

As likely as not, due to accidental historical reasons, the use and the explanation of the definite article within proper names is very inconsistent and does not make much sense in systematic terms in everyday English. Generally speaking, English grammars have a tendency to claim that proper names do not take articles, which is not quite true. Some of them are consistently articleless, while others appear with articles on a regular basis.

To display the contrast between proper nouns/names in English and Albanian, we based our description on the following simplified system of onomastic (sub) categories:

Table 29: An overview of onomastic (sub)categories

(Sub)Category	Examples
BIONYM	
anthroponym	first name, surname, etc
zoonym	animal, bird, insect
phytonym	flower, shrub, tree, fruit, vegetable, etc.
ABIONYM	
TOPONYM	
cosmo-/astronym	universe, galaxy, star, comet, planet, etc.
oikonym	villages, towns, cities, states, etc.
anoikonym	continent, region, water body, mountain, road, atmospheric event (wind)
CHREMATONYM	
chrononym	day, month, year
social event	feast, holiday, battle, etc.
institution	hotel, cinema, theatre, bank, corporation, ministry, etc.
result/product	document, written stuff, work of art, means of transport, product, etc.

Generally speaking, most of the Albanian nouns would fit into the table above and be listed as proper nouns/names. This is especially true for the class of toponyms and chrematonyms.

On the other hand, some of the nouns included in the division above as proper nouns are not perceived as such in Albanian. This is especially true for the zoonyms and phytonyms under the heading of bionyms. In Albanian, they are treated and referred to as common nouns, therefore they are not capitalized, and will accordingly be excluded from our analysis. Anthroponyms, however, do behave like proper nouns/names in Albanian and will be dealt with in detail.

2.2.2.1 Definiteness with Albanian anthroponyms

English anthroponyms, or names of persons, are generally preceded by no article (or ‘null’ to use Chesterman’s term). In spite of this general tendency, though, there are special cases, in which the English personal names do bear an article, either definite or indefinite. Since our study is focused on the formal expression of definiteness, we select cases in which the English personal nouns appear with the definite article to contrast them with the situation in Albanian.

Thus, the definite article is regularly used with personal names in the plural to indicate the entire family, as in:

The Elliots, apart from my father, who was unlike the rest, were an intelligent lot without much sensitivity or intuition.

He didn't even know the Chapins had a daughter.

He is very different from the rest of the Hofmans.

This particular use is expressed in Albanian by means of a definite plural noun; a typical Albanian family would then be *Dukagjinët/the Dukagjinës*.

In Albanian, personal names can, to our knowledge, appear both with a definite or indefinite form (within or outside a context). As with common nouns, the category of in/definiteness is expressed by a postposed inflected form, either definite or indefinite.

Thus, for example, given names or forenames (first or Christian names), standing alone. e.g. *Illir* (masc., indef.), *Monika* (fem., def.), *Gonxhe* (fem., indef.), have the marker of definiteness in the form of an inflectional suffix. This ending combines in itself the category of in/definiteness, gender, number and case: *Illir* (indef.) – *Iliri* (def.); *Monikë* (indef.) – *Monika* (def.); *Gonxhe* (indef.) - *Gonxhja* (def.). The choice between the indefinite and definite form is not clear and we could not find references in consulted grammars, but we are of the opinion that the surname (family or last name), on its own is always definite in Albanian: *Panajoti*, *Koka*, *Bojaxhiu*. The same is seemingly true when the surname is used together with the given name: *Illir* (indef.) *Panajoti* (def.), *Monika* (def.) *Koka* (def.), *Gonxhe* (indef.) *Bojaxhiu* (def.). However, the combination of given name + surname is somewhat peculiar. While the combination: first name/s (masc.) + surname (masc.) follows the equation first name/s (indefinite) + surname (definite): *Illir Panajot-i*, the feminines behave differently and we get the following patterns:

First name/s (fem., declension type –*ë/a*) + surname – feminine follows the equation: first name/s (definite) + surname (definite): *Monik-a Kok-a*.

First name/s (fem., declension type *je-a*) + surname follows the equation: first name/s (indefinite) + surname (definite): *Gonxh-e Bojaxhi-u*.

It seems that the in/definite form of the given feminine name followed by a surname is influenced by the declension group the first name belongs to.

The addition of the titles to the combination given name + surname does not seem to have any effect on the choice of in/definiteness markers. Let us see several examples to illustrate the situation:

zonja Monika Koka (fem., def.) – *Mrs Monika Koka*: (def.) (def.)(def.)

zonja Gonxhe Bojaxhiu – *Mrs Gonxhe Bojaxhiu*: (def.) (indef.) (def.)

zoti Illir Panajoti (masc., def.) – *Mr Illir Panajoti*: (def.) (def.)(def.)

In the following cases in which the personal name is accompanied by an honorable title, the personal names usually retain the indefinite form, while the title is used with the definite form/ending (except for (ii) where the proper noun is definite, too):

- (i) *Zoti – the Lord* (is definite in Albanian)
- (ii) titles of peerage while followed by an a genitive form in Albanian, (*of*) phrase in English; *Mbret-i i Shqipërisë – the King of Albania*
- (iii) imperial titles: *Imperator-i Napoleon – the Emperor Napoleon, Mbret-i Albert, etc.* – the King Albert

The appearance of Albanian personal proper nouns/names in various combinations with regard to their in/definite forms has not been previously mentioned in the literature. This phenomenon has come to light by comparison with English usage described in English grammars where, unlike in Albanian grammars, this issue is widely discussed. The table below displays all the possible combinations that will be part of our analysis.

Table 30: Distribution of personal proper noun/name combinations found in the corpus

	Name combination	Journalistic style	Literary style	T otal
(i)	first name alone	7 (11.7%)	14 (23.3%)	21 (17.5%)
(ii)	first name + surname	28 (46.7%)	18 (30.0%)	46 (38.3%)
(iii)	surnames alone	7 (11.6%)	10 (6.7 %)	17 (14.2%)
(iv)	title + first name	6 (10.0%)	6 (10.0%)	12 (10.0%)
(v)	title + surname	3 (5.0 %)	4 (6.7 %)	7 (5.8 %)
(vi)	title + first name + surname	6 (10.0%)	5 (8.3 %)	11 (9.2 %)
(vii)	titles alone	3 (10.0%)	3 (5.0 %)	6 (5.0 %)
	Total	60 (100.0%)	60 (100.0%)	120 (100.0%)

The possible combinations yielded by corpus analysis are the following: First name alone, first name combined with a surname, surname alone, title in combination with a first name, surname preceded by a title, title followed by both, a first name and a surname and finally, titles alone. All seven combinations require some detailed discussion (listed under: i-vii).

(i) First name alone

In both parts of the corpus, the occurrences are definite.

(ii) First name and surname

The occurrence of this combination is by far the highest (46 instances, 38.3%) in both parts of the corpus and it requires a more detailed analysis and description. The patterns found are given in the following table.

Table 31: Proper nouns: first name and surname in combination

Name combinations	Journalistic style	Literary style
Masculine 1st name + surname in <i>-i</i> or/and <i>-u</i>	28	16 + 1 (94.4%)
Feminine 1st name + surname in <i>-e</i>	0	1 (5.6%)
Feminine 1st name + surname in <i>-a</i>	0	0
Total	28 (100%)	18 (100%)

Table 31 shows that all the inspected examples in journalistic style are combinations of a masculine 1st name + surname. In all of the inspected cases, the first name was indefinite, whereas the surname was definite. When the first name appeared alone outside of context, it was always definite, as in: *Dashuria e tij për **Krishtin** (def.), shpirti i tij luftarak “për t’i fituar shpirtrat Perëndisë”, ndezin zemërgjerësinë dhe shtynjë ta dëshirojnë martirizmin. / His love for **Christ**, his combative soul able to win “other souls for the Lord”, initiate charity and a desire in martyrdom.*

There are only some examples that did entirely match the equation indefinite first name + a definite surname, and need to be discussed separately for each part of the corpus.

In the journalistic part of the Albanian corpus, these are two occurrences with the following combination: 2 first names indefinite + 1 definite surname, namely:

*Që nga Iballja e Pukës me Terenc Toçin e deri në Kalanë e Deçinit me **Dedë** (indef.) **Gjo** (indef.)*

***Lulin** (def.), ngritja e flamurit kuq e zi shërbeu si paraardhës i festës sonë kombëtare, më 28 Nëntor 1912 në Vlorën e Ismail Qemalit. / The raise of the red and black flag served as a descendant of our national feast of November, 28th, 1912 in the Vlora of Ismail Qemali from Ibellja in Puka with Terenc Toc to the Fort of Decin with Dedë Gjo Luli.*

*Sikurse shpjegohet në raportin e cituar më sipër, duke qenë se nuk ishin të pajisur me sigurime të qarta, Imzot Serreqi, të nesërmen e mbërritjes së tij, në mëngjes, u nis për Cetinë, së bashku me At Gjergj Fishtë, **Dom** (indef.) **Ndre** (indef.) **Planin** (def.) dhe Luigj Gurakuqin, për të marrë sqarimet e nevojshme nga Legata Perandorake atje lidhur me lëshimet konkrete të palës turke. / As already explained in the above written report, Imzot Serreqi, one day from his arrival, decided in the morning to go out to Cetina with At Gjergj Fishta and Dom Ndre Pali, so that they could get the needed explanations from the Imperial troops on the actual concessions on the Turkish side.*

In these two examples, the two first names (both indefinite) are followed by a definite surname.

Despite a slight difference in the general pattern, the overall rule is not disrupted, though. It is still

the case that the first name remains indefinite and the definite marker is on the surname.

In literary style, the situation is almost the same. All but one of the cases are combinations of a 1st name indefinite masculine + definite surname. Similarly as in the journalistic texts, there are a couple of examples, though, that do not quite match with the above statement.

*Ja në sektorin e jashtëm, me të cilin merresh ti, shkrimet për sukseset e letërsisë e të arteve në Kinë, në Vietman e në Kubë, ose njoftimet për artin revolucinar përparimtar në botë nuk janë aq të shpeshta sa ç' duhet, kurse ca lajme e ca shkrime e ca shkrime të tjera, si për shembull vdekja e shkrimtarit amerikan Heminguej, bashkë me pëshpërimat për dyshimet për vetvrasjen e **Merilin** (indef.) **Monrosë** (def.) kanë zënë shumë vend. / If we have a look at the international sector that you are involved in at the moment, we have to admit that the articles about the success of art and literature in China, Vietnam and Cuba, or announcements of the revolutionary art in the world are not as frequent as one would expect. On the other hand, some other news and articles, like for example the death of the American writer Hemingway as well as the murmurations about Marilyn Monroe's suicidal suspicions have taken up all the place.*

The first name in this example is grammatically declined as a masculine noun ending in *-i* (nom., def., sg.). In fact, it is a female first name, which, however, has no effect on the way the in/definiteness is displayed in the combination, i.e. the 1st name is indefinite and the surname definite.

The following example, on the other hand, is a pure feminine, both grammatically and naturally, ending in *-ja* (nom., def., sg.). The pattern here is the following: 1st name (indefinite) + surname (definite), which is exactly the same way in which masculine first names in combination with a surname behave.

*Një pyetje e ngjashme mund të bëhej lidhur me gruan e re fiorentinase, **Beatrice** (indef.) **Portinarin** (def.), asaj që u tregua e kursyer me poetin, dhe që vdiq pastaj në moshën 24 vjeçe, pa u bërë, si thuhet, e tija. / A similar question could be raised in connection with the young florentine woman Beatrice Portinari, who apparently seemed not to be too generous to the poet and who died at the age of 24, without ever becoming his.*

All in all, the prevailing pattern for the masculines is 1st name (indefinite) + surname (definite), which is interesting. However, this raises the question whether the combination of first name (indefinite feminine) + surname (definite) illustrated in example (a) is a typical representative of this combination. It made us go back to the corpus again and examine the feminine personal proper nouns (first names) ending in *-a* in the definite singular of the nominative. The definite

nouns ending in *-a* were chosen on purpose because as we know, nouns ending in *-ja* (nom., def., sg.) seem to behave mostly as masculines, i.e. they appear indefinite when accompanied by a definite surname. Therefore, we had to make sure whether this is also the case of the other feminine declension subgroup.

It was decided to select 80 more examples for additional analysis, again from journalistic and literary styles, 40 for each, and check how much they behave in accordance with the group declension they belonged to. The reality turned out to be different, however. The corpus yielded 40 examples from journalistic style but only 2 feminine first names accompanied by a surname, which means the data was somewhat limited.

Still the data clearly shows that all the 42 feminine first names ending in *-a* (nom., def., sg.) use a definite case ending when accompanied by a surname, without one single exception. This finding definitely supports the conclusion that the gender of personal first names and the declension group play a significant role when it comes to the question of definiteness of Albanian proper names/nouns.

Returning to the analysis based on Table 31, we need to take a close look at other combinations, as well. Generally speaking, in the combination first name + surname, there was at least one definite and one indefinite element. The combination in which both the first name and the surname were indefinite appeared in the following sentences:

*Nga ajo gjuhë a nga ajo zhurmëri, ai mbrujti poemën e vet hyjnore, ndaj pavarësisht nga prishja e buzëve të nazikëve luksozë e, pa dyshim, të sinqertë, të llojit **Alfons** (indef.) **Lamartin** (indef.), ato rrugë e rrugina, bashkë me gjuhën, me dritaret e zbehta, me shiun e me prostitutat e lagura prej tij, janë të pandara prej poetit. / He sculpted his divine poem out of that language and the all surrounding noise. Despite the displeased expressions of the snobish pickies of the type of **Alfons Lamartin**, that without a doubt were extremely sincere, those streets and alleys, together with the language and pale windows, with the rain and the prostitutes wet of it are inseparable of the poet.*

In this example both the first name and the surname are indefinite. We believe, however, that the declension (of the genitive) used is not appropriate here. This can be explained by the fact that it is a foreign name (sometimes, foreign names that should be in the genitive are left in the original nominative in Albanian as presumably speakers find the declined form unusual and awkward).

The next sentence:

*Dy veprat e tjera janë novelat e gjata të viteve '30, njëra "Gjaku" e Ernest Koliqit, dhe tjetra "Studenti në shtëpi" e **Millosh** (indef.) **Gjergj** (indef.) **Nikollës** (def.). / Other two works are the*

long novels of the 1930's, one named "The Blood" by Ernest Koliqi and the other "The Student at home" by Millosh Gjergj Nikolla.

is an example of two indefinite first names followed by a definite surname. A similar case has already appeared in journalistic style and it actually does not run out of the almost established pattern: the unity of two first name (indefinite) + surname (definite).

(iii) Surname alone

All 17 inspected occurrences in both the journalistic and literary parts of the corpus show the surname to have a definite form if used alone.

(iv) Title and first name

In this combination, a uniform formula does not seem to be the rule. In journalistic style, the tendency is to use definite title + indefinite 1st name (with the exception of the following three examples where the pattern goes the other way round, i.e. indefinite title + definite name):

*Këtu në një lokal të vogël pranë xhamisë takojmë **dajë** (indef.) **Shefqetin** (def.). / Here, in a little tavern close to the mosque, we meet uncle Shefqet.*

*Në këtë vepër të gjithë dijetarët, poetët, dhe fisnikët francezë, pranojnë që Shqiptarët ose Epirotasit (dy emra sinonimë, flisnin shqipen ose gjuhën epirotase, gjuhë që nuk ishte as greke, dhe as sllave), pasardhës të Pirros dhe të Aleksandrit, sikurse edhe stërgjyshërit e tyre, kanë luftuar për më se 30 vjet kundër invadorëve turq, ndërsa serbo-bullgarët nën udhëheqjen e princit të përbuzsshëm serb, George Vicovich, tradhëtuan shqiptarët dhe u bashkuan me **Sulltan** (indef.) **Muratin** (def.). In this work, all French scholars, poets and nobles admit that Albanians or Epirotas (two synonymous names for a people speaking an epirot language, a language that was neither Greek, nor Slavic), descendants of Pirros and Alexander the Great alike their great grandfathers had been fighting against the Turkish invaders, whereas Serbo-Bulgarians under the leadership of the despised Serbian prince George Vicovich, betrayed the Albanians and joined Sultan Murat.*

***Shën** (indef.) **Palin** (def.) (10-67 mbas Krishtit) e quajnë edhe Pali i Tarsit, nga emri i qytetit ku jetoi në të ritë e tij, diku në Turqinë e sotme jugore./ Saint Paul (10-67 A.C.) is also called Paul of Tars, because of the name of the town he used to live in his youth.*

Literary texts, on the other hand, show more regularity in the pattern indefinite title + definite 1st name. Examples where the definite title is followed by an indefinite 1st name are rare:

***Kolonelin** (def.) **Z.** s' e gjetëm që s' e gjetëm dot, - tha me zë të shkujdesur. / We could not find colonel Z, - he said in a heedless voice.*

Ngjarja, sipas tij, ka qenë kjo: **mbretin** (def.) **Hamlet** (indef.) e ka zënë gjumi, “në lulëzim të mëkatit”, domethënë, fill pas dashurisë, në kopshtin e vet. / According to him, this was how it happened: king Hamlet fell asleep in his garden “in the bloom of his crime”, in other words immediately after he fell in love.

(v) Title and surname

In this combination, it is difficult to identify a uniform pattern. In journalistic style, there are only three examples of this combination. The first two are of the definite title + an indefinite name type:

Vepra e shokut (def.) *Stalin* (indef.) mbi gjuhësinë dhe problemet tona gjuhësore në dritën e këtyre veprave, duke folur për gjuhën letrare, pas vlerësimit që i bënte kontributit të Kristoforidhit, Naimit dhe Samiut për kristalizimin e gjuhës nacional letrare, si e quante ai në atë kohë, shtonte se gjatë Rilindjes edhe kleri katolik i veriut nisi të zgjerojë veprimtarinë e tij të hershme letrare. / The work of comrade Stalin on linguistics and our contemporary language problems in their perspective, talking about the written language, and after the evaluation of the contribution of Kristoforidhi, Naim and Sami Frashëri on the crystallization of the standard national language, as he used to call it back in time, added that during the National Awakening, the Northern Catholic clergy started to widen its literary activities.

Shoku (def.) *Stalin* (indef.) formuloi në mënyrë përfundimtare teorinë materialiste të gjuhës. / Comrade Stalin gave a concluding formulation on the materialistic theory of the language.

The last example of this combination has the pattern definite title + definite surname.

Këto përbëjnë garancitë më të mëdha jo vetëm për presidentin (def.) *Rugova* (def.) dhe klasën politike kosovare, por edhe për komunitetin ndërkombëtar që po e vlerëson përherë e më shumë në një drejtim të tillë. / These comprise the largest guarantees not only for president Rugova and the Kosovo political class, but also for the international community that values most a similar orientation.

All in all, in both parts of the corpus, it is possible to find the combination of the following two patterns: either definite title + indefinite 1st name or indefinite title followed by a definite 1st name. The balance between definite/indefinite forms is held by the alternation of both forms.

In literary style, examples are generally uniform, i.e. the pattern here seems to be the following: an indefinite form on the surnames preceded by a definite form on the title. The surnames are of foreign origin, though, so there might be some difficulties with their declension. The users therefore find it easier to use them undeclined.

(vi) Title and first name and surname

Journalistic style shows at least three possible patterns of personal proper nouns/names in terms of definite/indefinite forms:

- a) definite title followed by indefinite first name + definite surname
- b) definite title followed by indefinite first name + definite 1st name
- c) definite title followed by indefinite first name + indefinite surname is also possible, as in

Kryeministri (def.) **Vladimir** (indef.) **Putin** (indef.), *gjatë një vizite në Ukrainë, tha se është takuar me spiunët rusë që u dëbuan kohët e fundit nga Shtetet e Bashkuara. / The Prime Minister Vladimir Putin during a visit to the Ukraine said that he met Russian spies who had recently been expelled from the United States.*

The literary style texts and the journalistic ones concur in containing the pattern definite title + indefinite first name + definite surname (the one inflected according to the required case is the title), e.g.:

Të tjerët, që mendonin të kundërtën, ndër të cilët hynte edhe përkthyesi i Hamletit në gjuhën tonë, peshkopi (def.) *legjendar Fan* (indef.) *Noli* (def.), *këmbëngulnin që Hamleti, jo vetëm që s' u tregua i lëkundshëm, por brenda një kohe të shkurtër bëri kaq shumë mort, sa që fare mirë mund të cilësohej, pas qokave të sotme, si një vrasës në seri. / The ones who thought the contrary, one of which was also the translator of Hamlet into our language, the legendary bishop Fan Noli, insisted that not only was Hamlet hesitating in his endeavour, but he killed so many people within a relatively short amount of time, that in the contemporary society he could very easily be seen as a serial killer.*

Sytë e tij të ftohtë blu, kryqëzohen urrejtshëm me sytë e shefit të opozitës, peshkopit (def.) *Fan* (indef.) *Noli* (def.). */ His cold blue eyes crossed with hatred the eyes of bishop Fan Noli, the head of the opposition.*

Përmes fushës një grua me emrin (indef.) *Marie* (def.) *Noli* (def.), *ecën me një thes në krahë. / A woman named Marie Noli was walking across the fields, carrying a sack on her back.*

The pattern: definite title + indefinite first name + indefinite surname can be found in the example:

Ndërprerja, qoftë dhe e dhunshme, e jetës tokësore, si i ndodhi Marlowe-it te taverna e vejushës (def.) *Leni* (indef.) *Bull* (indef.), *jo vetëm nuk e dëmtonte jetën e dytë, por kishte gjasë ta hieronte më fort. / No matter how violent, the interruption of the terrestrial life, as it occurred to Marlowe at the tavern of the widow Leni Bull, did not only damage the second life, on the contrary, there was a chance that it could strengthen it more.*

Where the literary style examples differ from the examples in the journalistic texts is the pattern indefinite title+indefinite first name+definite inflected surname, as in:

Ndër të parat përkthime, fill pas pavarësisë dhe kaosit shqiptar ka qenë Kënga e njëmbëdhjetë e Parajsës (Shën Françesku), prej Pater (indef.) Vinçens (indef.) Prenushit (def.), poet e dijetar, vdekur tragjikisht më pas në burgjet komuniste. / One of the first translations, immediately after the independence and the Albanian chaos was The song eleven of the Paradise (St. Francis) by Father Vinçens Prenushi, a poet and a scholar who tragically died in communist prisons.

The presence of only one occurrence does not allow generalization, though.

(vii) Titles alone

Generally, in both examined styles, the inspected instances are all definite. There is an interesting exception in the literary style where the title is indefinite. This is a rather rare case of an archaic form of the vocative which takes an indefinite form. Similar cases have been mentioned in the literature.

O Perëndi (indef.), ia bëri me vete kur në kryqëzim u duk një grumbull njerëzish që mbanin mbi supe një arkimort të zi. / O Lord, he said to himself as he saw a crowd of people carrying a coffin down by the crossroads.

After describing the possible combinations of personal proper nouns/names selected in the corpus, we can proceed to their syntactic position in the sentence. Particular attention will be paid to the question of whether the syntactic position of proper names/nouns has any impact on their in/definite form.

The next step in the analysis consists in examining comprises the behaviour of Albanian proper nouns in contrast to English proper nouns within a specific context or referential range. We apply the Huddleston and Pullum system (shown in 1.4) to the Albanian proper nouns/names, setting up the following types of use:

- a) denotation of a set of bearers of the name: **Pauli** (masc., def.) *që takuat para pak kohe është im shoq. / The Paul that you met a while ago is my husband.*
- b) denotation of a set of entities having relevant properties of the bearer of the name: *Ai nuk është Bethoveni/si Bethoveni* (masc., def.). */ He is not a Beethoven.*
- c) denotation of a set of manifestations of the bearer of the name: *Kjo nuk është Londra* (fem., def.) *që mbaj mend unë. / This not the London I remember.*
- d) denotation of a set of products created by the bearer of the name: *Dëgjuam Shopenin* (masc., def.) */ një pjesë nga Shopeni* (masc., def.) *sot në darkë. / We listened to some Chopin tonight.*

e) denotation of a set of copies/editions, etc. of the entity bearing the name: *A mund ta shoh pak Morning Heraldin* (masc., def.) *tuaj?* / *Can I have a look at your Morning Herald?*

The comparison showed the following features:

In all uses in groups a) to e) Albanian proper nouns/names were found to have a definite form. Example under (b) had to be paraphrased in Albanian, so rather than *a Beethoven*, we have *like Beethoven*, since verbatim translation would lead to ambiguity in meaning (the paraphrase literally means ‘he is not Beethoven, but someone else’, in other words, it has no relation to the qualities of the musician in question). A similar situation occurs in example under (d), where we have to specify that we listened to a piece written by Chopin.

To sum up, if compared to the English system of personal proper nouns/names, there is a striking difference in Albanian evident right from the start, namely the excessive use of definite forms. Albanian personal proper nouns/names are widely used with a definite inflectional form/article. The corpus evidence may be summed up as follows:

- (1) First names and surnames when standing alone in Albanian tend to have a definite form. In English, they are used with the definite article only in a specific situation.
- (2) The possible combinations of personal proper nouns in Albanian (listed under points (ii) to (vii) of Table 30) are also mostly definite. When the personal proper nouns/names combine with another element, the combination behaves as a definite unit, i.e. there is a definite form in at least one of its elements.

In contrast to the conclusions presented in (1) and (2) the situation in English is quite the reverse (cf. section 1.4). Personal proper names/nouns, whether combined with another element or not (surname, title, etc.), are articleless, unless they appear in a very specific context. As the discussion of the notion of “properhood” in the theoretical part suggests, properhood is already an integral part of personal names in English and so there is no need for additional information on definiteness by means of an article. In Albanian, where nouns must take either definite or indefinite inflection, the choice of definite forms with personal proper names/nouns is almost inevitable. Especially as the postposed article (incorporated into the noun) not only shows in/definiteness, but also other accumulated grammatical functions (as mentioned in the theoretical section), namely case, gender and number.

2.2.2.2 Definiteness with Albanian toponyms

The category of toponyms (place names) includes cosmonyms, astronoms, and geonyms, i.e. oikonoms and anoikonoms.

(i) Cosmonyms (names of galaxies):

The Milky Way / Rruga (def.) *e qumështit*, *the Great Andromeda Nebula*, *The Andromeda Galaxy / Galaksia* (def.) *e Andromedës* (def.)

Cosmonyms in Albanian tend to appear with the definite article as shown in the examples above.

(ii) Astronoms:

Under the astronoms, we list the heavenly bodies: *the Sun / Dielli* (def.); *the Moon / Hëna* (def.); *Mars – Marsi* (def.); *the Earth / Toka* (def.), *the Great Bear / Arusha* (def.) *e Madhe*

It follows from these examples that the Albanian counterparts of the English astronoms appear with a definite form.

(iii) Geonyms - oikonoms and anoikonoms:

Under these, we understand place names situated on the Earth's surface are technically divided into man-made and inhabited (oikonoms) or uninhabited, both man-made and artificial, forming part of the landscape (anoikonoms). Again, there are certain tendencies in the use of definite reference, but also exceptions.

(iiia) Oikonoms

As in English, this group includes names of a great variety of places. For some of these names, the use of the article is unstable. On the whole, the usage is as listed below:

(1) names of **countries, territories, provinces, cities, towns** and **villages** are generally used without the article in English. Moreover, they do not take an article even when being modified by attributes, *such as north(ern), south(ern), west(ern), east(ern)*, etc. On the other hand, though, there are exceptions to the rule and the proper names listed below always appear in English with the definite article:

(a) countries: *the USA, the Ukraine, the Argentine* (sometimes used without an article), *the Congo, the Lebanon, the Netherlands (the Low Countries), the Kameroon, the Sudan, the Senegal, the Gambia* (however, with the exception of names including a common noun and a plural form the use of the definite article in the names of countries is nowadays officially regarded as politically incorrect and the article is dropped; instead it is recommended to speak of *Ukraine, Sudan, Gambia* etc.).

In Albanian, we find the names of the states with a definite form, such as: *Anglia* (def.) /

England, Brazili (def.) / Brasil, Shqipëria (def.) / Albania, Franca (def.) / France, etc.

(b) names of territories in which the last word is a common noun appear with the definite article, as in: *the Lake District, the Yorkshire Forests, the Virgin Lands, etc.*

In Albanian, the names of territories would likewise appear with a definite form, e.g. *Rrethi (def.) i Matit / the Mat District, Territori (def.) Autonom i Kosovës dhe Metohisë / the Autonomous Province of Kosovo and Metohija,*

(c) provinces: *the Crimea, the Caucasus, the Ruhr, the Tyrol, the Transvaal, the Riviera*

In Albanian, the names of the provinces appear with a definite form, too, such as: *Kaukazi (def.) / the Caucasus, Ruhri (def.) / the Ruhr, Tiroli (def.) / the Tyrol, Riviera (def.) / the Riviera, etc.*

(d) cities: *the Hague*

In Albanian, the names of the cities are always definite, as in: *Nju Jorku (def.) / New York, Parisi (def.) / Paris, Londra (def.) / London, Praga (def.) / Prague, etc.*

(2) names of **streets, parks** and **squares** are usually used without a formal article in English, e.g.:

(a) streets: *Oxford Street, Southampton Row, Kingsway, Pall Mall, Piccadilly, Fleet Street, Whitehall, Wall Street, etc.* In English street names typically take the zero article, only the names of some streets are traditionally used with the definite article, such as *the Strand, the Highstreet, etc.* However, the names of streets in foreign countries are also used with the definite article, such as *the Rue de Rivoli, etc.* (because of the influence of the source language).

In Albanian, on the other hand, street names invariably have a definite form, as in: *Rruga (def.) e Durrësit / the Durrës Street, Rruga (def.) e Arbërit / the Arbër Highway, Rruga (def.) e Kombit / the National Highway, etc.*

(b) parks are also generally articleless in English: *Hyde Park, Central Park, Memorial Park, Regent's Park, etc.*, but: *the Snowdonia National Park, the Bodant Gardens, etc.* Names of parks in foreign countries, similarly to the names of streets above, are often used with the definite article, e.g. *the Gorki Park, the Tiergarten, etc.*

In Albanian, parks are used with a definite form, e.g. *Parku (def.) i madh i Tiranës (def.) / the Grand Park of Tirana, or Parku (def.) i Shën Prokopit (def.) / Park of Saint Procopius.*

(c) squares also tend to appear without articles in English: *Trafalgar Square, Russell Square, Hyde Park Corner, Picadilly Circus, Leicester Square, etc.* However, names of squares in foreign countries appear with the definite article, e.g. *the Red Square.*

In Albanian, the names of squares take the genitive construction (corresponding to the *of-*phrase in English) and have a definite form, as in *Sheshi (def.) i Skënderbeut (def.) / the Square of Scanderbeg, Sheshi (def.) i Prishtinës (def.) / the Square of Prishtina, etc.*, but! *Sheshi (def.) Nënë*

(indef.) *Tereza* (def.) / *Mother Teresa Square*, *Sheshi* (def.) *Ibrahim* (indef.) *Rugova* (def.) / *Ibrahim Rugova Square*, *Sheshi* (def.) *Ismail* (indef.) *Qemali* (def.) / *Ismail Qemali Square*, etc. In cases where the name of the square includes a personal name, the definite form appears with the same regularity as when the surname stands alone. The usual pattern is square (def.) + indef. first name + def. surname.

Despite the fact that with many English place names the use of the definite article is rather unstable and varies from name to name, as in: *Scotland Yard*, *Westminster Abbey*, *Buckingham Palace*, we also encounter cases, such as: *the Old Bailey*, *the Tower*, *the Royal Exchange*, etc.

In Albanian, similar cases would all have a definite form, as in *Pallati* (def.) *i Kongreseve* / *the Palace of Congresses*, etc.

(iiib) Anonymy:

In this specific group, there are two prevailing tendencies in English. Most of the geographical names are traditionally used without any article; some, however, take the definite article. Generally speaking, there does not seem to be a uniform principle governing the use or the absence of the article, therefore we will divide these geographical names into semantic groups.

Proper names without the definite article:

(1) names of **continents** (even when modified by attributes, such as *northern*, *southern*, *western*, *central*, etc.): *Europe*, *Asia*, *Africa*, etc. ! but *the Antarctic* (regions, meaning the land and the sea around the south pole) and *the Americas* (meaning both North and South America; the article prevents generic reading).

In Albanian, the continents are used in the definite form, even in cases when they are modified by attributes mentioned above *Amerika* (def.) *e Jugut* / *South America*, *Evropa* (def.) / *Europe*, *Asia* (def.) / *Asia*, etc.

(2) names of **oceans, seas, straits, channels, canals, rivers and lakes** usually appear with the definite article in English:

(a) oceans: *the Pacific (ocean)*, *the Atlantic*, *the Indian ocean*, *the Arctic (ocean)*.

In Albanian, the names of oceans are definite, too, as in: *Oqeani* (def.) *Paqësor* / *The Pacific Ocean*, *Atlantiku* (def.) (*Oqeani Atlantik*) / *The Atlantic Ocean*, etc. As in English, the word *ocean* can be omitted from the name, yet again the remaining name has a definite form.

(b) seas: *the Baltic (sea)*, *the Mediterranean*, *the Black sea*, *the Adriatic*, *the North sea*, *the South Seas*, etc.

In Albanian, we have the following: *Deti* (def.) *Mesdhe*, *Mesdheu* (def.) / *The Mediterranean*

(sea), *Deti* (def.) *i Vdekur* – *the Black sea*, *Deti* (def.) *verior* / *the North Sea*, etc. As in English, the second element is sometimes omitted from the whole nominal construction and the remaining name has become institutionalized as a full name: *Oqeani Atllantik* / *The Atlantic Ocean* or *Atllantiku* / *The Atlantic*, *Deti Mesdhe* / *The Mediterranean Sea* or *Mesdheu* / *The Mediterrenean*, *Lumi Danub* / *The Danube River* or *Danubi* / *The Danube*, etc. In these cases, the postposed definite form moves to the remaining name: *Mesdheu* (def.).

(c) straits: *the Magellan Strait*, *the Bering Straits*, *the Torres Straits*, *the Kattegat*, *the Bosphorus*, *the Dardanelles*, *the Skagerrak*, etc.

In Albanian, the names of straits also take the definite form: *Ngushtica* (def.) *e Magellanit* / *the Strait of Magellan*, *Bosfori* (def.) / *(the) Bosphorus*, etc.

(d) channels: *the English Channel*.

The names of channels in Albanian are definite, too, as in: *Kanali* (def.) *i La Mançit* / *The La Manche*, etc.

(e) canals: *the Kiel Canal*, *the Panama Canal*, *the Suez Canal*, etc.

In Albanian, also canals appear with a definite form: *Kanali* (def.) *i Panamasë* / *The Panama Canal*, *Kanali* (def.) *i Suezit* / *The Suez Canal*, etc.

(f) rivers: *the Volga*, *the Thames*, *the Nile*, *the Amazon*, *the Mississippi*, etc.

In Albanian, rivers are no exception and also take a definite form, such as: *Danubi* (def.) / *The Danube* / *Lumi Danub* / *The Danube (river)*, *Shkupi* (def.) (*Lumi i Shkupit*) / *The Shkupi (river)*, *Vltava* (def.) (*Lumi Vltava*) / *The Moldau (river)* etc.

(g) lakes: *the Baikal*, *the Leman*, *the Ontario*, etc., but also *Lake Michigan*, etc., without the article.

In Albanian, the names of lakes are with a definite form, as in: *Liqeni* (def.) *i Michiganit* / *Lake Michigan*, *Liqeni* (def.) *i Ohrit* / *Ohrid Lake*, etc. Usually, these constructions are made of two elements, one of which is in the genitive (similar to the English *of* – genitive). In fact, both names, the one in the nominative and the other in the genitive are definite.

As indicated, there is an exception to the rule with names of lakes in English. Lakes can also appear with zero, but only when the word *lake* precedes the actual name of the lake: *Lake Superior*, *Lake Baikal*, *Lake Ohio*, *Lake Como*, *Lake Ladoga*, *Lake Michigan*, *Lake Ontario*, *Lake Erie*, etc. The reversed order of the word *lake* and its actual name is not possible in Albanian. It is possible, though, to have the combination of the word *lake* / *liqeni* with a definite form and the non-inflected name of the lake, as in: *Liqeni* (def.) *Baikal*, but not **Baikal Liqeni* / *Lake Baikal*, *Liqeni* (def.) *Como* / *Lake Como*, *Liqeni* (def.) *Michigan* / *Lake Michigan*, etc.

(3) names of **bays** appear in English without any article, such as: *Hudson Bay*, *Baffin Bay*, etc.

In Albanian, on the other hand, these names take a definite form: *Gjiri* (def.) *i Meksikës* - *The Gulf of Mexico*, *Kepi* (def.) *i Shpresës së mirë* - *the Cape of Good Hope*, *Gjiri* (def.) *i Biskajës* - *the Bay of Biscay*, etc.

(4) English names of **peninsulas** have no article if the proper name is used alone, as in: *Indo-China*, *Hindustan*, *Kamchatka*, *Labrador*, *Taimir*, *Scandinavia*, etc. If the word *peninsula* is part of the name, then the definite article is required: *the Balkan Peninsula*, *the Kola Peninsula*, etc.

In Albanian, the usage is as follows: *Gadishulli* (def.) *Ballkanik* (*Ballkani*) (def.) / *the Balkans* (*the Peninsula of the Balkans*), *Gadishulli* (def.) *Apenin* / *Apennine Peninsula*, *Gadishulli* (def.) *Pirenej* / *the Iberian Peninsula*, etc. In all these cases the word *gadishulli/peninsula* has a definite form, the actual name of the peninsula functions as an adjective to the noun *gadishulli*.

(5) names of **deserts** are generally used with the definite article in English, as in: *the Sahara*, *the Gobi*, *the Kara-Kum*, etc.

In Albanian, the word *shkretëtira/desert* with a definite form is part of the actual name; the name of the desert is in a definite genitive form: *Shkretëtira* (def.) *e Saharasë* (def.) / *the Sahara*, *Shkretëtira* (def.) *e Gobit* (def.) / *the Gobi*, *Shkretëtira* (def.) *e Kara-Kumit* (def.) / *the Kara-Kum*, etc.

(6) English names of **mountain chains** and **groups of islands** are usually used with the definite article:

(a) names of mountain chains: *the Rocky Mountains*, *the Andes*, *the Alps*, *the Pamirs*, *the Urals*, etc.

In Albanian, they are all with a definite form, as in: *Himalajat* (def.) / *The Himalayas*, *Andet* (def.) / *The Ands*, *Alpet* (def.) / *The Alps*, *Pirenejt* (def.) / *The Pyrenes*, etc.

(b) groups of islands: *the Philippines*, *the Azores*, *the Bahamas*, *the East Indies*, *the Canaries*, *the Hebrides*, *the Bermudas*, etc.

The groups of islands in Albanian again have a definite form, as in *Hebridet* (def.) / *Ishujt Hebride* / *The Hebrides*, *Ishujt* (def.) *Kanare/Kanaret* / *The Canary Islands*, etc.

(7) In English, the names of individual **mountains** that are named outside a mountain range appear usually without an article, as well as the names of separate **islands**, for example *Elbrus*, *Mont Blanc*, *Everest*, *Vesuvius*, *Sicily*, *Cuba*, *Haiti*, *Cyprus*, *Newfoundland*, *Madagascar*, etc. This is not the case in Albanian, where they are definite.

So, in Albanian we have *Ben Nevisi* (def.) / *Ben Nevis*, *Mont Blanku* (def.) / *Mont Blanc*, *Mali i Dajtit* (def.) / *Dajti Mountain* (an Albanian mountain close to Tirana), or *Sazani* (def.) / *the Isle of Sazan*, etc.

(8) names of **waterfalls, mountain passes, valleys and forests** are generally used with the definite article in English:

(a) waterfalls: *the Niagara Falls, the Swallow Falls, etc.*

In Albanian, these names appear with a definite form, too, as in *Ujëvara (def.) e Niagarës / The Niagara Falls, Ujëvara (def.) e Mirushës / the Mirusha Falls, etc.*

(b) mountain passes: *the Saint Gotthard Pass, etc.*

Likewise in Albanian, mountain passes are used in definite form, as in *Qafa (def.) e Dërrasës / the Dërrasa Pass, Qafa (def.) e Prushit / the Prushi Pass, etc.*

(c) the Albanian names of **valleys and forests**, too, have definite forms: *Lugina (def.) e Valbonës / the Valbona Valley, Pylli (def.) i Divjakës – the Divjaka Forest, etc.*

Other natural phenomena such as certain winds, *veri – north wind, goren – north wind, blizzard, etc.*, are used with the indefinite form in Albanian and are not capitalized.

Generally speaking, English geographic names that are used without the definite article may occasionally appear with both the definite and the indefinite article. The definite article is found when there is a limiting attribute, as in: *Gone is **the Moscow of the merchants and the aristocrats; the Moscow of the toilers** has replaced it. / Moska e hershme e tregtarëve dhe aristokratëve është zhdukur; atë e ka zëvendësuar Moska e punëtorëve. In Ivanhoe Walter Scott described **the England of the Middle Ages.** / Në romanin Ajvanho Valter Skoti përshkruan **Anglinë** mesjetare.*

The indefinite article shows a particular aspect or facet of the place: *The aerial shots give a stunning view of **a Moscow of that time period.** / Fotografitë ajrore ofrojnë një pamje madhështore të **Moskës në atë periudhë.** England's centre of gravity shifted from south to north; **the England of the squirearchy** was replaced by **an England of merchants and manufacturers.** / Boshti i gravitetit në Angli u zhvendos nga jugu në veri. Anglia e fisnikëve u zëvendësua me **një Angli (indef.) tregtarësh dhe prodhuesësh.** Except for one case, all the examples above would translate into Albanian by the means of a definite form.*

The definite article is always used in English with appositive combinations: a common noun + of + a proper name, as in: *the City of New York, the village of Grasmere, the Cape of Good Hope, the Gulf of Mexico, the Straits of Gibraltar, the Straits of Malacca, the Straits of Dover, the Bay of Biscay, the Bay of Bengal, the Gulf of Finland, the Lake of Geneva, the Island of Majorca, etc.* Albanian would translate the above mentioned nouns by means of a genitive construction, such as: *Liqeni i Gjenevës (def., gen.), Ishulli i Majorkës (def., gen.), qyteti i Nju Jorkut (def., gen.), etc.*

The English constructions typical of the names of natural features (e.g. forests, woods and hills), but also man-made features (roads, streets, squares, buildings, airports, parks and gardens)

once again correspond in Albanian to genitive constructions (similar to the English *of*-genitive) and have a definite form here (e.g. *Rruga e Durrësit / the Durrës Street*). Like in other geographical names, both the head and the noun in the genitive are definite in Albanian.

On the whole, the application of the English system of place name usage to the Albanian geographical proper nouns and their use of definiteness may be summed up as follows:

Both languages mostly overlap when it comes to the use of the definite article/form with the proper noun/name. This is especially true for the names of oceans, seas, straits, channels, canals, rivers and lakes. Equally, both English and Albanian tend to use the definite article/form with the names of deserts, names of mountain chains, names of groups of islands, falls and mountain passes.

On the other hand, the contrastive method showed that English and Albanian differ in their use of definiteness in the names of continents, countries, cities, names of bays, peninsulas and separate mountain peaks. In all these, English uses the zero article (or null), whereas Albanian consistently keeps the definite form.

2.2.2.3 Definiteness with Albanian chrematonyms

Chrematonyms, or the names of human artefacts and inventions (unattached to the landscape), include the following subcategories in English which are of interest in terms of in/definite reference: chrononyms (temporal names), social events, institutions (of administration, education, culture, etc.), and results/products of human action.

(i) Chrononyms:

Certain temporal nouns are treated as proper names, or chrononyms, in English and accordingly capitalized (such as periods of time, week days and months) and used with a null article. Other English chrononyms may have definite reference (such as the names of seasons). The status of these chrononyms in Albanian is somewhat different. They are not capitalized and considered to be proper nouns/names. This applies to the days of the week and also to the months of the year: *janari / January, marsi / March*, etc. They all appear with a definite form.

(ii) Social events:

Social events (sometime subsumed under chrononyms) represented by the names of festivals and feasts (*Christmas, the Easter, Passover, Pentecost, Yule, May Day, Candlemas, Ash Wednesday*, etc.), are typically expressed in Albanian as *Krishtlindja* (def.), *Pashka, Ramadani*, etc.

(iii) Institutions (ergonyms):

(1) English names of **organizations** and political **parties** appear with the definite article, as in: *the*

Liberal Party, the National Trust, the Church, the London City Counsel, the Soviet Army, etc.

In Albanian, similar proper names have a definite form, too, as in *Partia (def.) Demokratike e Shqipërisë / the Democratic Party of Albania, Ushtria (def.) Çlirimtare e Kosovës / the Kosovo Liberation Army, etc.*

(2) Names of **universities** and **colleges** are generally not used with the article in English, e.g., *London University, Cambridge University, Oxford University, Harvard University, Trinity College, Upsala College, etc.*

In Albanian, on the other hand, the definite form is very common in the following expressions: *Universiteti (def.) i Tiranës (def.) / the University of Tirana, Universiteti (def.) i Londrës (def.) / London University, etc.*

(3) There is a tendency not to use the definite article with **airports** in English, as in: *London Airport, Moscow Airport, etc.*, but parallel to this usage, we can also find names of airports with the definite article (though the usage strongly vacillates and both definite and zero forms are found): *the Washington Airport, the Dublin Airport, etc.*

In Albanian, the usage is as follows: *Aeroporti (def.) Nënë Tereza / Mother Teresa Airport, Aeroporti (def.) i Prishtinës / Prishtina Airport, etc.* The word *aeroporti-airport* present in the name always appears with a definite form.

(4) Names of **theatres, museums, picture galleries, concert halls, cinemas, clubs** and **hotels** tend to appear with the definite article in English:

(a) theatres: *the Coliseum Theatre, the Opera House, the Bolshoi Theatre, etc.*

In Albanian, we have genitive definite forms corresponding to the *of* construction in English, such as *Teatri (def.) Kombëtar i Prishtinës (def.) / Prishtina National Theatre (The National Theatre of Prishtina), Teatri (def.) Kombëtar i Komedisë (def.) / The National Theatre of Comedy, Teatri (def.) Kombëtar i Operës (def.), Baletit (def.) dhe Ansamblit (def.) Popullor / The National Theatre of Opera, Ballet and National Ensemble, etc.*

(b) museums: *the British Museum, the Scottish National Museum, etc.*

In Albanian, the names of the museums have a definite form, too, as in: *Muzeumi (def.) Kombëtar / the National Museum, Muzeumi (def.) i Krujës / the Kruja Museum, Muzeumi (def.) i Tiranës / the Tirana Museum, etc.*

(c) picture galleries: *the National Gallery, the Hermitage, the Louvre, etc.*

In Albanian, all these galleries appear with a definite form, too: *Galeria (def.) Kombëtare – the National Gallery, Ermitazhi (def.) /the Hermitage, Louvri (def.) / the Louvre, etc.*

(d) concert halls: *the Festival Hall, the Albert Hall, the Carnegie Hall, etc.*

In Albanian, the names of concert halls will again appear with a definite form, as in: *Salla* (def.) *e Pallatit* (def.) *të Kongreseve* (def.) / *the Hall of the Palace of Congresses*, *Salla* (def.) *e Madhe e Koncerteve* (def.) / *the Great Concert Hall*, *Salla* (def.) “*Çesk Zadeja*” / *the Cesk Zadeja Hall*, etc.

(e) cinemas: *the Empire*, *the Dominion*, *the Odeon*, etc.

In Albanian, we find the names of cinemas to have indefinite forms, as in: *kinema* (def.) “*Imperial*” (indef.) / *Imperial cinema or kinema* (def.) “*Millenium*” (indef.) / *Millenium cinema*. In both cases, the word *kinema / cinema* is definite, whereas its actual name appears with an indefinite form. This might be due to the fact the proper names here are foreign and the overall tendency in Albanian is not to apply inflection to alien words.

(f) clubs: *the National Liberal Club*, *the Rotary Club*, etc.

In Albanian, the names of bars and clubs would appear with a definite form, as in *Bar Lizardi* (def.) / *the Lizard Bar*, *Bar Pjeshka* (def.) / *the Peach Bar*, etc. again, as it was the case the names of cinemas, foreign names appear with an indefinite form, local names with a definite form.

(g) hotels: *the Ambassador Hotel*, *the Continental Hotel*, *the Savoy*, etc.

The names of hotels and restaurants can, in Albanian, appear with an indefinite form, such as: *Hilton* (indef.), *Ritz* (indef.), but with a definite form in cases such as *Pavarësia* (def.) / *the Independence Hotel*, *Dajti* (def.), *Primavera* (def.), etc.

(iv) names of **results/products of human activities:**

Two interesting categories were chosen for illustration:

(1) names of **ships** and boats are used with the definite article, as in: *the Sedov*, *the Titanic*, etc.

In Albanian, the names of ships and boats are once again used with the definite form: *Fitorja* (def.) / *the Victory*, *Vlora*, *Partizani*, etc.

(2) names of **newspapers** and **magazines** are very often used with the definite article in English, as in: *the Times*, *the Manchester Guardian*, *the Lancet*, *the Word*, etc.

Likewise in Albanian, they tend to appear with a definite form: *Zëri* (def.) *i Popullit* – *The Voice of the People*, *Pavarësia* (def.) / *The Independence*, *Revista* (def.) *Jeta* / *The Life Review*, etc.

2.2.2.4 Concluding remarks on proper names in Albanian and English

To sum up, the list of English proper names used with or without the definite article does not always correspond to Albanian proper names. Certain Albanian nouns have a different status. They are not capitalized and so not considered proper nouns in Albanian unlike in English. It is not only the

names of days or months, but, for instance, names of nationalities or languages. In English, on the other hand, they are written with capital letters and used without the definite article (the article appears with languages only when followed by the word *language*; cf. *French, Czech, English, Albanian*, etc. but: *the French language, the Czech language*, etc). An exceptional use is in the following constructions: *Translated from the German...., What is the French for ...*, etc.

Generally, the use of definiteness marking in English and Albanian toponyms and chrematonyms varies to some extent. Sometimes it overlaps more, sometimes less, but there are also cases, where the situation in both languages is completely different. This is especially true of English proper nouns that have a tendency to appear without the definite article, such as the names of streets, parks and squares. In all these categories, the Albanian counterparts do have a definite form. If the expressions involve two nouns and a genitive construction (comparable to the English *of* phrase), also the noun in the genitive is always definite in Albanian.

Then there are other groups of names in which there are differences between the two languages in the expression of definiteness. Unlike in English where they tend to be articleless, the names of universities appear with a definite form in Albanian. Likewise the names of airports in English are usually without any article, while in Albanian they have a definite form.

By contrast, the use of definiteness in the names of theaters, museums, picture galleries, concert halls and clubs is similar in both languages. They appear with the definite article in English and with a definite form in Albanian. So do the names of organizations and political parties.

The names of cinemas, on the other hand, as well as some hotel names typically have an indefinite form in Albanian. Although the names of Albanian cinemas are indefinite they are preceded by the word *kinema / cinema* with a definite form, and so to call the whole expression indefinite is somewhat problematic. Even the situation with names of hotels is rather complicated. The data on their usage collected from the Internet sources leads to the conclusion that local/native names of hotels tend to have a definite form, whereas foreign names are indefinite. There is a strong tendency in Albanian to leave foreign name uninflected and the question is whether such names are really indefinite or whether their in/definite reference is indeterminable. As was already shown in the theoretical part and elsewhere, definiteness and declension in Albanian go hand in hand and cannot be separated from one another. In other words, the expression of definiteness in Albanian is so intertwined with the rest of the nominal grammatical categories that given the essentially unique reference of proper names the choice between definite and indefinite declension is largely predetermined. Only in (appositional), expressions involving two nouns the question is whether both, or only one (and which one), will take a definite form.

2.3 Text-oriented investigation

As was mentioned above, comparison of the English and the Albanian category of definiteness and its exponents is approached in two ways. First of all by comparing the uses of the definite article with English common nouns in nongeneric and generic reference and proper names with Albanian translations and the corpus and Internet data, focusing on the typical examples. This approach ensures that the whole range of definite reference uses in English is checked to see to what extent it can be matched by Albanian definite forms. The advantage of this procedure is that it covers all possible types of definite reference and special cases. The disadvantage is that these examples typically involve isolated sentences without a wider context.

The second line of investigation therefore focuses on samples of parallel texts, original and translation, to see whether the correlations found in grammar examples also hold in consecutive texts. The disadvantage of this method is that in order to achieve equivalence in translation, the translator may, or sometimes even has to, depart from the original and disregard definite reference in the original for other considerations. Nevertheless comparison of parallel texts makes it possible to reveal certain tendencies and patterns that will not be obvious from grammatical descriptions and isolated examples. In order to make full use of this method, the investigation proceeds in two directions, from English to Albanian and from Albanian to English. In principle it is possible to use either two pairs of parallel texts or just one pair of parallel texts (with the original and translation serving both as a source and a target text and vice versa). Both possibilities have their advantages and disadvantages. In this study the second of the two was decided on in the hope that using the same passages in both directions will profit from the same character and content of the texts in the comparison, especially as the Albanian translation is of such a quality that it can pass off as an Albanian original.

2.3.1 Marcuse text: English-to-Albanian definite reference correlation in translation

For the purposes of our text-oriented investigation, we started with the translation of a passage from the book *One-Dimensional Man* (1964, ed. used 2002, London and New York: Routledge) by the American philosopher, sociologist and political theorist Herbert Marcuse (1898-1979) of German origin. This important book is a sweeping critique of capitalism in the West and communism in the Soviet Union in the 1950s and 60s, focusing on the negative aspects of "advanced industrial society" which ties up individuals with the existing system of production and consumption via mass media and results in new forms of social repression preventing criticism and opposition and thus

creating a "one-dimensional" universe of thought and behaviour.

There were several reasons for choosing this book. First of all its translation is relatively recent and so reflects contemporary language. Secondly, the character and prestige of the book are a guarantee that the translation was entrusted to a professional translator and the quality of the translation will thus not compromise the results of this probe. Also, it was hoped that the nature of the text which covers a complex subject from different aspects and at different levels is such that its variety will ensure the presence of a whole range of different types of definite reference indicated by the definite article. This expectation was fulfilled: the text contained all the types of definite reference described in Quirk et al. (1985), in fact even more, and so provided a good opportunity to see how the Albanian translator dealt with them.

The selection of the passage (Chapter 2, 21-29) was determined by qualitative and quantitative criteria. It should offer a suitable blend of narrative and technical discourse to capture different types of definite reference. It should be of sufficient length, but not too long to yield unnecessarily repetitive data. In the end, the examined text was delimited to contain cca 200 nouns (singular and plural), with the definite article (212 items to be precise), excluding those in footnotes. The nouns in the text were indexed (001 – 212), to ensure ease of reference and analyzed for the type of definite reference that resulted in the use of the definite article.

The analysis of reference in the English nouns was based on the list of the types (following Quirk et al., 1985; for details see Section 1.4.1 above), namely: (a) situational reference (due to the immediate and the larger situation), (b) direct anaphoric reference, (c) associative (typically indirect anaphoric) reference, (d) sporadic reference, (e) logical use of *the*, (f) modification-affected (or rather effected), reference (typically due to postmodification, but also premodification and apposition), (g) body part reference. These seven types were supplemented by two additional factors: the use of the definite article in phraseological/idiomatic expressions and in generic reference.

The Albanian equivalents of the English nouns with the definite article were assessed in several points: first, all equivalents other than nouns had to be excluded; second, nouns were divided according to their form and reference into those with definite reference and those with indefinite reference; third, Albanian nouns with definite reference were subdivided according to the way in which the reference was signalled, i.e. definite form, definite form combined with possessive and other means.

The results of the analysis of parallel texts in the English-Albanian direction are summarized in Table 32. As the Table shows, of the 212 English nouns with definite reference expressed by the

definite article in the original, there are three cases where the English noun does not have a nominal counterpart in the Albanian translation. Two of these nouns with the definite article in English were not translated in the Albanian text at all (the translation paraphrased the original in such a way that there is no correlate in the text), and one of the three was due to stylistic reasons translated into Albanian by means of an adverb. Translation by an adverb is interesting in that it translates an idiomatic expression in the original:

*Neither nationalization nor socialization alter by themselves this physical embodiment of technological rationality; on **the** contrary, / As shtetëzimi dhe as shoqërizimi nuk e ndryshojnë nga vetvetja këtë mishërim fizik të racionalizmit teknologjit, **përkundrazi**...*

Table 32: Marcuse text analysis: English nouns with *the* and their Albanian equivalents

English text	Albanian translation					total
	definite reference			indefinite reference	no-noun equivalent	
type of definite reference	def.refer.	def.+pos.	demonst.			
modification	81	8	-	5	2	96
situational	23	12	-	1	-	36
associative	17	9	1	-	-	27
generic	7	12	-	2	-	21
logical	10	3	2	-	-	15
direct anaphora	10	2	-	1	-	13
body part	-	2	-	-	-	2
sporadic	1	-	-	-	-	1
idiomatic	-	-	-	-	1	1
Total	149	48	3	9	3	212

Of these 212 English nouns, 149 (70.3 %), were translated by an Albanian noun with a definite form, 48 (22.6 %), were translated by Albanian nouns in which definite form combined with the possessive (in all of these cases the possessive is a genitive construction of another noun). Only 3 English nouns (1.4 %), were translated by Albanian nouns with another marker of definiteness – in all of them it was the demonstrative pronoun *ky/kjo* – *this* (masc., fem.). Although these three Albanian nouns are in indefinite form, the use of demonstratives is an unambiguous signal of definite reference and so these cases are subsumed under definite reference nouns together with definite form nouns. Unfortunately, the number is too small to say whether the use of the demonstrative has any systematic reasons apart from simple exophora. Here is an example:

*And, if the second alternative is true, how does it change the relationship between capitalism and socialism which made **the** latter appear the historical negation of the former? / Dhe në qoftë se është e vërtetë alternativa e dytë, si e ndryshon ajo raportin midis kapitalizmit dhe socializmit, i cili e bëri **këtë** të fundit të shfaqej si mohimi historik i të parit?*

Quite interestingly, in 9 cases (4.3 %), English nouns with definite reference (*the*), were translated by Albanian nouns with indefinite form. To sum up the results, in 200 cases there was a correspondence in definite reference between English and Albanian (in the English to Albanian direction). Specifically, in 197 cases (92.9%), the English and Albanian noun phrases shared definite reference expressed by formal markers (English *the* and Albanian definite form, simple or combined), in 3 more cases (1.4 %) Albanian used a different marker of definiteness (demonstrative). Finally, in 9 (4.3 %) cases with indefinite reference there was a mismatch in the in/definiteness category between the two languages and 3 (1.4 %), cases the English noun does not have a nominal equivalent in Albanian.

Before we concentrate on the definite reference source nouns (noun phrases), and their equivalents which represent the majority default solution, it is necessary to explain the reasons for the appearance of nine cases of indefinite reference equivalents which seem to be an exception from the rule. Of these 9 cases, two are preceded by the preposition *në*, which according to what is mentioned in the theoretical part of the study (Section 1.3.3.2), is always followed by an indefinite noun in Albanian, unless this noun is developed any further. One of the two examples is listed below:

*There is continuity in **the** revolution: technological rationality, freed from irrational restrictions and destructions, sustains and consummates itself in the new society. / Ka një vazhdimësi **në** revolucion: racionalizmi teknologjik, i çliruar nga kufizimet irracionale dhe shkatërrimet, ruhet dhe përsoset në shoqërinë e re.*

Of the seven remaining instances, one is translated by a noun phrase in the plural instead of the singular (which appears in the English text). The Albanian noun phrase in the plural has indefinite reference because, unlike in the English text, it is used generically and in this respect departs from the English original:

*In the United States, one notices **the** collusion and alliance between business and labour. / Në*

Shtetet e Bashkuara vërehen marrëveshje të fshehta dhe aleanca midis botës së biznesit punëtorisë së organizuar.

The indefinite reference in the other six cases seems to be structurally determined. One of them appears with the comparative adverb *si – as*, after which the indefinite form regularly appears in Albanian:

*It is interesting to read a Soviet Marxist statement on this continuity, which is of such vital importance for the notion of socialism as **the** determinate negation of capitalism. / Është interesante të lexojmë një shprehje Marksiste Sovjetike për këtë vazhdimësi, e cila është me rëndësi kaq jetike për nocionin e socializmit **si mohim** i përcaktuar i kapitalizmit.*

The other five Albanian indefinite noun phrases translating English nouns with definite reference all occur after the Albanian verb *jam* (corresponding to the English *to be*). Syntactically speaking, these nouns are in the position of a subject complement which is further modified by a noun in the genitive or ablative case. In one of these cases, the noun is preceded by the numeral *një-one*, which very often functions as a lexical mark of indefiniteness in Albanian. So the syntactic position (combined in one case with the numeral), causes the Albanian equivalents to be used in indefinite form. This is unlike the situation in English where subject complement nouns after the copula (4 out of 5 English nouns appeared after the verbs *to be/become*, which are listed among typically copular verbs), may be used with the definite article depending on the circumstances. One example of the English nouns is a postmodification of a demonstrative pronoun; the entire construction starts with the preposition *of*. Another explanation may be found in the kind of definite reference of the English noun phrases: in 5 of them it is due to modification, in two cases to generic reference and the remaining two instances may be interpreted as resulting from situational or direct anaphora. Here are two examples for all:

*... the public and private in all spheres of society – that is, becomes **the** medium of control and cohesion in a political universe which incorporates the laboring classes – to that degree would the qualitative change involve a change in the technological structure itself. / në të gjitha sferat e shoqërisë – kjo do të thotë që bëhet **mjet** i kontrollit dhe i kohezionit në një univers politik, i cili i përllan klasat punonjëse – po në atë shkallë ndryshimi cilësor do të sillte me vete një ndryshim në vetë strukturën teknologjike.*

*And such a change would presuppose that the laboring classes are alienated from this universe in their very existence, that their consciousness is that of **the** total impossibility to continue in their very existence.... / Dhe një ndryshim i tillë do të presupozonte që klasat punonjëse pikërisht në*

ekzistencën e tyre janë të ftohura prej këtij universi, që vetëdija e tyre është ajo e një pamundësie totale për të vazhduar që të ekzistonte....

However, the main finding is that the 212 English definite noun phrases marked by *the* in the source text are translated in 200 cases (94.3%), by Albanian nouns likewise with definite reference. Table 32 above summarizes the kinds of reference which explain the use of *the* in the English text and their distribution. As was mentioned above, the character of the text is such that it offers examples of practically all kinds of definite reference associate with the use of the definite article in English. By far the most frequent is definite reference due to (post)modification, 96 (45.3 %), items, i.e. close to a half of all the 212 instances of English definite noun phrases marked by *the*. The possible reason for such a high incidence of modification-induced definite reference is the intellectual explanatory tenor of the text which requires a great deal of specification in the noun phrases. Also the distribution of the other kinds of definite reference seems to confirm this impression (cf. the relatively frequent occurrence of generic noun phrases), though not so much as the modification-induced definite reference.

Thus situational reference accounts for 36 (17.0 %), cases of the English definite noun phrases, followed by associative (anaphoric) reference, 27 (12.7%), generic reference, 21 (9.9%), logical definite reference, 15 (7.0 %), and direct anaphora, 13 (6.1 %). Sporadic and body part reference are a marginal occurrence, 1 and 2 cases respectively, as might be expected in this type of text.

The table also shows that in a quarter of the Albanian definite form noun phrases, i.e. 48 (24.4 %), of 197 (excluding equivalents with the demonstrative), the definite reference is expressed by a combination of a definite form with the possessive. Given this number of definite-possessive forms among the Albanian equivalents, it is notable that the proportions of Albanian definite-possessive forms translating four of the most frequent types of English definite noun phrases are different, i.e. it is either too low or too high. It raises the question whether this is accidental (since the number of examined items is not too high), or whether certain types of definite reference attract translation by definite-possessive forms or on the contrary.

Especially in the most frequent group, Albanian equivalents of the English noun phrases with definite reference due to (post)modification, the proportion of definite-possessive forms is remarkably low, 8 : 81. In other words, translation of the noun phrases with this type of definite reference is very rarely found with definite-possessive markers. Both examples listed below illustrate equivalents with definite form only and with definite-possessive form respectively:

We see **the** phenomenon today of unions and corporations jointly lobbying. / Ne shohim sot **fenomenin** që sindikatat dhe korporatat llobojnë së bashku.

...the roots of **the** conflicts which Marx found in the capitalist mode of production (contradiction between private ownership of the means of production and social productivity) or is it a transformation of the antagonistic structure itself, which resolves the contradictions by making them tolerable? / ... prek rrënjët e **konflikteve**, që Marks i zbuloi në mënyrën kapitaliste të prodhimit (kontradikta midis pronësisë private mbi mjetet e prodhimit dhe produktivitetit shoqëror) apo është ai një transformim i vetë strukturës antagoniste, e cila i zgjidh kontradiktat duke i bërë ato të pranueshme?

By contrast the proportion dramatically rises in equivalents of the English noun phrases with the second most frequent kind of definite reference, situational. Here we find 12 definite-possessive forms (52.2 %), compared to 23 definite form equivalents. They are illustrated by two examples below:

...the policy, where the programs of **the** big parties become even more undistinguishable, even in the degree of hypocrisy and in the odor of the cliches. / ...në politikën e brendshme, ku programet e **partive** të mëdha po bëhen gjithnjë e më të padallueshme, madje edhe në shkallën e hipokrizisë dhe në kundërmimin e klisheve.

As for the strong Communist parties in France and Italy, they bear witness to the general trend of circumstances by adhering to a minimum program which shelves the revolutionary seizure of power and complies with the rules of **the** parliamentary game. / Për sa u përket Partive të fuqishme Komuniste në Francë dhe në Itali, ato vërtetojnë prirjen e përgjithshme të situatës duke përkrahur një program minimal, i cili mbyll në sirtar marrjen me revolucion të pushtetit dhe kënaqen me rregullat e **lojës** parlamentare.

Very much the same proportion, 9 : 17, appears with Albanian equivalents of the English noun phrases with *the* due to associative (anaphoric), definite reference. The definite-possessive forms account for 52.9 % (excluding the one instance of an equivalent preceded by the demonstrative). Here are two examples of the definite-possessive form equivalent and definite form equivalent respectively are:

...the roots of the conflicts which Marx found in the capitalist mode of production (contradiction between private ownership of the means of production and social productivity) or is it a transformation of **the** antagonistic structure itself, which resolves the contradictions by making them tolerable? / ... prek rrënjët e konflikteve, që Marks i zbuloi në mënyrën kapitaliste të

prodhimit (kontradikta midis pronësisë private mbi mjetet e prodhimit dhe produktivitetit shoqëror) apo është ai një transformim i vetë strukturës antagonistë, e cila i zgjidh kontradiktat duke i bërë ato të pranueshme?

*Though the development of technology is subject to the economic laws of each formation, it does not, like other economic factors, end with the cessation of the laws of **the** formation. / Megjithëse zhvillimi i teknologjisë iu nënshtrohet ligjeve ekonomike të çdo formacioni shoqëror, ai nuk mbaron, si faktorët e tjerë ekonomikë, me pushimin e veprimit të ligjeve **të formacionit**.*

It is possible that the reason for the high incidence of definite-possessive form equivalents in these two groups is due to different reasons. However, the small number of these instances makes it tricky to explain why equivalents of English nouns with situational and associative anaphoric definite reference tend to display definite-possessive forms to a degree much higher than equivalents of English noun phrases with modification-affected definite reference.

Exactly the opposite situation obtains with equivalents of the English generic noun phrases using the definite article: the proportion is 12 : 7, i.e. there is almost twice as many equivalents with definite-possessive form compared to equivalents with definite form. The former are illustrated by the first example and the latter are illustrated by the second example listed below:

*... the transformation of physical energy into technical and mental skills is emphasized. "skills of the head rather than of the hand, of **the** logician rather than the craftsman... / ... thekohet shndërrimi i energjisë fizike në zotësi teknike dhe intelektuale: " më shumë zotësitë e kokës sesa të dorës, **e logjicienit** sesa të zejtarit, e nervave sesa të muskujve, e drejtuesit sesa të punëtorit të krahut...*

***The** proletarian of the previous stages of capitalism was indeed the beast of burden, by the labor of his body procuring the necessities and luxuries of life while living in filth and poverty. / **Proletari** i stadeve të mëparshme të kapitalizmit ishte vërtetë kafshë barre, duke garantuar nëpërmjet punës së trupit të tij nevojat dhe lukset e jetës, ndërsa vetë ai jetonte në pisllek dhe varfëri.*

This prevalence of definite-possessive form equivalents can hardly be attributed to chance. However, an explanation for the preference of definite-possessive forms as equivalents of the English generic noun phrases with *the* requires more data than provided by our sample.

The conclusions drawn from this part of the investigation of English-to-Albanian definite reference correlation in translation may be summarized as follows. The overall correlation between the English noun phrases with *the* and the Albanian nominal equivalents with formal marking of

definite reference is very high, 95.7 % (including three cases with definite reference expressed by the demonstrative). This applies to English nouns with almost any kind of definite reference without a difference. Consequently the mismatch between the two languages in terms of definite and indefinite reference is very small (4.3 %). The indefinite reference equivalents translating English noun phrases with *the* mostly appear to be due to structural reasons (mainly in the subject complement position). In this sense it seems that the definite noun phrases in the English text are equally interpreted as such in the Albanian translation and translate them as such by Albanian definite forms.

The fact that the English definite noun phrases are matched by equivalents with two kinds of definite-reference marking (definite form and definite form + possessive), raises the question whether there is any tendency to prefer one or the other form of marking with respect to the kind of definite reference resulting in the use of the definite article in English. In general, it seems that English noun phrases with definite reference due to (post)modification are almost invariably translated by definite-form equivalents. By comparison, English generic noun phrases with *the* are almost twice as often translated by definite form-possessive equivalents (and the same, but weaker, tendency, is observed with English nouns with *the* due to situational and associative anaphora definite reference).

So, in the English to Albanian direction, Albanian matches English in terms of definite reference in translation quite closely (only 9 English nouns with the definite article, i.e. 4.3 % were translated by Albanian nouns with indefinite form), and, on the basis of these findings only, we might conclude that the category of definiteness operates in the two languages in a very similar fashion.

2.3.2 Marcuse text: Albanian-to-English definite reference correlation in translation

However, for the sake of completeness an investigation of definite reference correlation in the opposite direction was made. It was decided to use the same pair of texts and this time to treat the Albanian translation of Marcuse's book as a source text. The same stretch of text was used as in the English-to-Albanian direction. Again all the Albanian definite nouns were counted in the text and the first surprising finding was that there were more than twice as many Albanian definite form nouns than there are English nouns with the definite article in the English original. To be exact, the text includes 428 Albanian definite nouns of which 271 (63.3 %), are nouns in definite form, 154 (36,0 %), are genitive possessive definite constructions and 3 occurrences (0.7 %), are Albanian

definite nouns preceded by a demonstrative pronoun.

Given such a large number of Albanian definite nouns, rather than identifying the type of definite reference (obviously the Albanian definite form noun can express any), we decided that the proportion of in/definite reference in the English counterparts was a far more important piece of information. As follows from the Albanian-to-English direction findings, 197 (46%), Albanian definite nouns are matched by English nouns with the definite article, 35 (8.2%), by English nouns with another definite determiner, 57 (13.3%), Albanian definite nouns corresponded to English nouns with *a/some*, and 130 (30.4%), to English nouns with zero/null article. Finally, 9 (2.2%), Albanian definite nouns did not correspond to an English noun. In brief, 428 Albanian definite nouns in the Marcuse text corresponded to 232 English nouns with definite reference (54.1%), and to 187 English nouns with indefinite reference (43.7%). The remaining 9 (2.1%), do not have an English nominal counterpart.

The significance of these findings becomes clear when we compare the situation in the English-to-Albanian and the Albanian-to-English direction:

Table 33: Comparison of English and Albanian definite noun equivalents in the Marcuse text

Definite noun equivalents	Eng → Alb		Alb → Eng	
definite	200	94.3%	232	54.1%
indefinite	9	4.3%	187	43.7%
0 equivalent	3	1.4%	9	2.2%
total	212	100.0%	428	100.0%

First of all, in the same passage of the English and Albanian text used alternatively as a source text and as a target text there are more than twice as many Albanian nouns with definite form than there are English nouns with the definite article (an increase by 216 nouns, i.e. 101.8 %). Secondly, while in the English-to-Albanian direction the English nouns were matched by Albanian definite form nouns in 94.3 % (or 95.7 % when only nouns with equivalents are counted), in the opposite Albanian-to-English direction it was a mere 54.1 % (or 55.4 % counting only nouns with equivalents). In other words, almost half of the Albanian definite form nouns in the same text were not matched by English nouns with definite reference. In proportion to this the English nouns were translated by Albanian nouns with indefinite reference in just 4.3 % of cases, whereas in the opposite direction the Albanian definite form nouns corresponded to English nouns with indefinite

reference in 43.7 % of cases. The inevitable conclusion is that Albanian uses definite nouns in text far more often than English does and conversely that English uses nouns with indefinite reference more often than Albanian does. To exclude the possibility that these proportions in the use of in/definiteness are due to the character of the text (type), another text considerably different in content and style was chosen and was subject to the same investigation.

2.3.3 Rowling text: English-to-Albanian/Albanian-to-English definite reference correlation

Rowling's Harry Potter sample was chosen as a text which is quite different in nature and style and so any tendencies it may have in common with the Marcuse text regarding the distribution of in/definiteness must be attributed to general tendencies in either language. Also the popularity and commercial success of the Harry Potter series which has found its way even to Albania should be a guarantee that the Albanian translation targeting particularly the younger generation will be of reasonably good quality and will reflect contemporary language. The selection of the first volume of the Harry Potter series, *Harry Potter and the Sorcerer's Stone* (1998, translated into Albanian in 2002), as well as that of the passage (Chapters 1 and 2, 1-19), was random. The only requirement was that the English source text should contain roughly the same number of nouns with the definite article and not too much direct speech to make it comparable with the Marcuse text.

Starting from the English original, once again the length of the sample passage was determined by the target number of nouns with the definite article in it (approximating that of the nouns in the Marcuse text). The English text contains 208 nouns with *the* and in effect sets the length of the Albanian text in which equivalents of the 208 English definite nouns are sought. In contrast to the procedure used in the Marcuse English-to-Albanian investigation we did not determine the source of definite reference in the English nouns for the simple reason that it has been amply established in the Marcuse text that most, if not all, English definite nouns can be matched by Albanian definite form nouns regardless of the source of definiteness and that any asymmetries are due to other reasons than a mismatch between the expression of definite reference in English and Albanian. In this situation what we are primarily interested is to find out whether in the Rowling text the same tendencies in the distribution of definite and indefinite noun equivalents obtain in the English-to-Albanian (and vice versa), direction as in the Marcuse text.

Analysis of the Albanian equivalents of the English definite nouns in the Harry Potter text shows that the distribution of equivalents is somewhat different, but that the overall trend is not unlike that in the Marcuse text. Of the 208 English nouns with the definite article, 147 (70.7 %),

have Albanian noun equivalents in definite form. Next, 3 English nouns (1.4 %), have Albanian equivalents representing a definite-form-genitive construction and 6 more (2.9 %), are Albanian equivalents with a definite determiner – the demonstrative pronoun (followed by an indefinite form of the noun). The total of Albanian definite reference nouns corresponding to the English nouns with *the* is 156, i.e. 75.0 %. Here are some examples:

*Mrs. Dursley was thin and blonde and had nearly twice the usual amount of neck, which came in very useful as she spent so much of her time craning over garden fences, spying on **the neighbors**.* /

*Zonja Dërsli ishte thatime, flokëverdhë dhe me një qafë pothuaj sa dyfishi i një qafe të zakonshme, gjë që I hynte në punë, meqë kalonte pjesën më të madhe të kohës duke e zgjatur tej gardhit për të përgjuar **fqinjët**.*

*It was on the corner **of the street** that he noticed the first sign of something peculiar – a cat reading a map.* / *Aty te cepi i **rrugës** vuri re shenjat e para të diçkaje të çuditshme: një mace ishte duke shqyrtuar një hartë.*

*He didn't say another word on **the subject** as they went upstairs.* / *U ngjitën lart në dhomë dhe nuk ndërruan më asnjë fjalë për **atë çështje**.*

In 24 cases (11.5 %), the English nouns with *the* are translated by Albanian indefinite form nouns. When subject to analysis, these indefinite form equivalents include the following cases whose syntactic functions require the indefinite form in Albanian: Cs, modification, preposition etc. Here are some examples of these indefinite reference equivalents:

*Mr. Dursley was **the director** of a firm called Grunnings, which made drills.* / *Zoti Dërsli ishte **drejtor** i një firme që quhej Grunnings, e cila prodhonte trapanë.*

*He didn't see the owls swooping past in broad daylight, though people down on **the street** did; they pointed and gazed open-mouthed as owl after owl sped overhead.* / *As nuk i pa bufët tek po fluturonin tufa-tufa në mes të ditës, por turmën e njerëzve në **rrugë** po.*

Finally, there are 28 cases (13.5 %), where the English definite noun does not have a nominal equivalent in the Albanian translation. The possible explanation for such a high number is that in a literary text of this kind, which exploits all manner of stylistic devices, the translator is bound to depart from the original to achieve similar stylistic effects as in the source language. If these 28 non-equivalent cases are substrated, the proportion of definite to indefinite reference equivalents is 86.7 % to 13.3 %, i.e. close to 9/10 of the Albanian equivalents retain the definite reference of the

English source text nouns.

All in all, the proportion of definite to indefinite equivalents is very high in the Rowling text although comparison with the Marcuse text shows that it is lower than in the Marcuse text (95.7 % of definite to 4.3 % of indefinite reference noun equivalents). Where the Rowling text markedly differs from the Marcuse text in the English-to-Albanian direction is the proportion of the no-noun equivalents which is more than nine times higher. Presumably this can be attributed to the artistically more elevated style of Harry Potter compared to the factual tone of the Marcuse text.

Switching the source and target texts, i.e. proceeding in the Albanian-to-English direction, the analysis showed that the number of Albanian definite nouns in the Albanian Harry Potter sample text is 260. Of these 260 definite nouns, 78 (30.0 %), are translated by English nouns with the definite article, 47 (18.1 %), by English nouns preceded by a definite determiner (45 possessives, 1 adnominal genitive construction, 1 demonstrative). This brings the number of English definite reference nouns to 125 (48.1 %). Indefinite reference equivalents include 58 (18.0 %), English nouns preceded by *a*, *some* or zero/null and one preceded by 1 indefinite pronoun. The total of English indefinite reference equivalents is thus 59 (22.7 %). Finally, a surprisingly high number of Albanian definite nouns, 76 (29.2 %), do not have any corresponding nouns in the English original, in fact 37 Albanian definite nouns simply do not have any correlates in the English text. Again, the most likely reasons for the high percentage of the Albanian definite nouns not translating to English nouns can be sought in the literary character of the text requiring a much looser mode of translation.

When the situation in both directions is compared (see Table 34), it is first of all evident that in the same passage there are 52 more Albanian nouns with definite form than in the corresponding English stretch of text, which is a 25 % increase compared to the English original. Second, while the English definite nouns were matched by Albanian definite nouns in 71.2 % (or 85.1 %, when the zero equivalents are subtracted), in the opposite direction the Albanian definite nouns were matched by the English definite nouns in 48.1 % (77 % with zero equivalents not counted). Third, the English definite nouns in the English source were matched by Albanian indefinite nouns in 11.5 %, whereas the Albanian definite nouns in the Albanian source text were matched by English indefinite nouns in 22.7 %. Finally, in the English-to-Albanian direction there are fewer cases of the English definite noun not being translated (13.5 %), than in the Albanian-to-English direction where 29.2 % of Albanian definite nouns had no noun correlate in the English text.

Table 34: Comparison of English and Albanian definite noun equivalents in the Rowling text

Definite noun equivalents	Eng → Alb		Alb → Eng	
	definite	147	71.2%	125
indefinite	24	11.5%	59	22.7%
0 equivalent	28	13.5%	76	29.2%
total	208	100.0%	260	100.0%

It is now possible to compare the definite reference correspondence in both the Marcuse and the Rowling text to see whether they display similar tendencies or whether in each text the definite reference correspondence is too specific to allow any general conclusions. In general terms, as Table 35 shows, with the English original as the source text (E →A) both the Marcuse and the Rowling text display on average (a) a higher percentage of Albanian definite nouns corresponding to the English definite nouns (84.7 %), than in the A→E direction, i.e. English definite nouns corresponding to the Albanian definite nouns (51.1 %), i.e. Albanian matches English definite nouns more easily than the other way round; (b) a lower percentage of Albanian indefinite noun equivalents of the English definite nouns (7.9 %), than in the opposite direction (33,2 %), i.e. English uses more indefinite equivalents of Albanian definite nouns; (c) a smaller percentage of Albanian zero equivalents than in the A → E direction (Albanian matches English nouns more frequently than English does the Albanian nouns). It follows that with the Albanian text used as a source text (A → E), the situation is the opposite: there are (i) fewer English definite nouns corresponding to the Albanian definite nouns, (ii) more English indefinite nouns on average corresponding to the Albanian definite nouns, and (iii) more English zero counterparts of the Albanian definite nouns. Finally, and as we believe quite importantly, the same text always contains strikingly more definite nouns in Albanian (428, 260), than in English (212, 208), i.e. by 63.8 % on average compared with the English original. In short, the overall tendencies in the Marcuse and the Rowling text are the same, where they differ is the degree to which they are present, i.e. in the Rowling text these tendencies are less pronounced than in the Marcuse text.

Table 35: Comparison of English/Albanian definite noun equivalents in the Marcuse/Rowling texts

Definite noun equivalents	Eng → Alb		Alb → Eng		Definite noun equivalents	Eng → Alb	Alb → Eng
	Marcuse	Rowling	Marcuse	Rowling		∅	∅
definite	94.3%	75.0%	54.1%	48.1%	definite	84,7%	51.1%
indefinite	4.3%	11.5%	43.7%	22.7%	indefinite	7.9%	33,2%
0 equivalent	1.4%	13.5%	2.2%	29.2%	0 equivalent	7.4%	15.7%
total	100.0%	100.0%	100.0%	100.0%	total	100.0%	100.0%

On the basis of the comparison of the tendencies in the Marcuse and the Rowling texts, it is possible to conclude that indeed Albanian appears to use definite nouns in text far more frequently than English does, and, conversely, that English uses nouns with indefinite reference more frequently than Albanian does. This suggests that in English and Albanian the category of in/definiteness may operate somewhat differently. In order to ascertain how much the strategies of applying the category of in/definiteness in the two languages differ we decided to look at the two texts from yet another angle and examine the distribution of in/definiteness in **all** nouns occurring in the English and Albanian parts of the Marcuse and Rowling text samples. That is we looked not only at nouns with definite articles/forms, but also at all definite and indefinite reference nouns in these texts, hoping that the proportion of the definite versus indefinite nouns in them would bring out the general tendencies of in/definiteness usage in the two languages even more clearly.

2.3.4 Marcuse text: in/definiteness marker distribution in English and Albanian

Starting with the Marcuse text, the count of the nouns showed that the English text contains a total of 522 common nouns. For the sake of simplicity no distinction is made between non-generic and generic reference, the assumption being that generic reference nouns occur relatively infrequently in text and so their inclusion under definite or indefinite reference nouns depending on their determiner will not significantly affect the general results. Of these 522 nouns, 212 (40.6 %), were preceded by the definite article and 45 (8.6 %), by some other definite determiner (such as the possessive, demonstrative or relative pronoun). This brings the number of definite reference nouns in the English text to 257 (49.2 %). The remaining 265 (50.8 %), nouns have indefinite reference expressed by the indefinite article, *zero*, *some* or some other indefinite determiner.

In the Albanian sample text the total of nouns is 556, i.e. the Albanian translation needed 34 more nouns to render the English source text. Of the 556 nouns, 428 (77.0 %), nouns are in definite

form (including combinations with the possessive, etc.), the remaining 128 (24.5 %), nouns have indefinite reference. It is crucial for our subsequent argumentation to show in what syntactic functions and structures these indefinite form nouns appear:

Preposition + NP:	68 (27 adverbials, 41 indirect objects)
Demonstrative + NP:	24
Subject complement:	14
Direct object:	13
Genitive modifier:	6
Fixed phrase:	2
Subject:	1 (unusual construction introduced by a conjunction)
Total:	128

There are two things worth noticing in these results: (i) the proportion of nouns with definite and with indefinite reference in the English and the Albanian text (see Table 36), and (ii) the syntactic characteristic of the Albanian indefinite reference nouns. The distribution of reference in the two Marcuse texts suggests that while in English the proportion of definite and indefinite reference nouns is almost equal (49.2 % of definite to 50.8 % of indefinite reference nouns), in Albanian definite form nouns are heavily prevalent while the indefinite reference nouns are a striking minority (77.0 % to 23,0%).

Table 36: The overall proportion of definite and indefinite reference nouns in the Marcuse text

Noun reference	definite	indefinite
English text	49.2 %.	50.8 %
Albanian text	77.0 %	23.0 %

Combined with the findings on definite reference correlation in the English and the Albanian part of the Marcuse text which show that (a) there is a considerably higher number of definite nouns in the Albanian sample than in the English sample and (b) the Albanian definite nouns are far more frequently correlates of the English indefinite nouns than is the case in the opposite direction, the results obtained from the Marcuse texts suggests that the expression of in/definiteness in Albanian is indeed specific. The corroboration of this was sought in the examination of the situation in the Rowling texts.

2.3.5 Rowling text: in/definiteness marker distribution in English and Albanian

Examination of in/definiteness marker distribution in the Rowling text, first in the English part and then in the Albanian one, brought the following findings (once again no distinction is made between non-generic and generic reference). In the English text, the total number of common nouns is 648. Of this total, 208 (32.1 %), nouns are with the definite article, 163 (25.2 %), nouns are preceded by another type of definite determiner (such as the possessive, 130, the demonstrative, 26, and others). The total of definite reference nouns is thus 371 (57.3 %). The remaining 277 nouns (42.7 %), are indefinite reference nouns preceded by one type of indefinite determiner or other (*a/some/zero*, indefinite pronouns, numerals, etc.).

The distribution in the Albanian text is as follows: the total of common nouns is 638. They include 260 (40.7 %), nouns with the definite form and 186 (29.2 %), nouns combined with some kind of definite determiner (typically demonstrative + indefinite form). The total of Albanian nouns with definite reference is 446 (69.9 %). The rest of the nouns, 192 (30.1 %), are nouns with indefinite form (combined with some kind of indefinite determiner). The indefinite reference nouns included nouns in structures or functions such adverbial PP (22), modifier (23), Od (72), Scomp (18), Oi (13) and fixed phrase. The in/definiteness marker distribution in the Rowling text in the English and the Albanian text is given in Table 37:

Table 37: The overall proportion of definite and indefinite reference nouns in (a) the Rowling text, and (b) both Marcuse and Rowling texts

Noun reference	definite	indefinite	Noun reference	definite Ø	indefinite Ø
English text	57.3 %.	42.7 %	English texts	53.2 %.	46.8 %
Albanian text	69.9 %	30.1 %	Albanian texts	73.4 %	26.6 %

Comparison of the in/definiteness marker distribution in the Marcuse and the Rowling texts (Tables 36 and 37), shows a similar picture: while in both English texts the proportion of definite and indefinite reference nouns is roughly equal (53.2 % and 46.8 % on average respectively), in the Albanian texts nouns with definite form (or reference), conspicuously prevail with 73.4 % on average (hence Albanian nouns with indefinite form account for 26.6 % only). In both English and Albanian texts the definite reference nouns cluster around the same syntactic functions and so the distribution appears to be very much standard. It is possible to say that in both parts of the text-oriented investigation, definite article/form noun correlation and the in/definite reference marker distribution, the Marucse and the Rowling text display similarities so strong that it is not unreasonable to conclude that they are indicative of the general tendencies and situation in these

two languages.

3. Conclusions

The dissertation sets out to compare the formal expression of definiteness in Albanian and English. After discussing the theoretical issues relating to reference, definiteness and the history of, and the present-day approaches to the article system accounts in the two languages, it turns to empirical examination of the situation in Albanian by contrasting it with the situation in contemporary English. The comparison proceeds along two lines: system-oriented and text-oriented investigation.

In the system-oriented investigation, drawing on the description of circumstances (as outlined by standard reference grammars of English) that result in definite reference in common nouns in English, we made a “checklist” of English definite reference uses and applied it to Albanian to see whether Albanian uses definite form nouns in the same situations where English uses nouns with the definite article. The data was collected from English-Albanian translation pairs, the Albanian corpus, the Internet and a questionnaire. The system-oriented investigation was divided into three parts: the first is concerned with Albanian common nouns in non-generic use, the second focuses on common nouns in generic use (the rationale being that prototypical generic reference in English is conveyed by means of the definite article, and the question is whether a similar use of definite forms is made in Albanian, and by extension how generic reference is expressed in Albanian at all), and finally, the third part concentrates on the use of definite form nouns used as proper names. The use of the definite article with proper nouns/names in English, a grey zone between common nouns and proper names, is a complicated issue and the task was to explore the Albanian usage in this area.

The main finding concerning the use of common nouns with definite non-generic reference in Albanian is that the definite article/form appears with the same (sub)types of definite reference (i.e. anaphora, cataphora or uniqueness due to cotext, context, modification, apposition, etc.), which entail the use of the definite article in the English nouns. There are notable exceptions such as the indefinite form of Albanian nouns in the accusative preceded by the preposition *në/on* in positions where English would have the definite article. Albanian also differs from English when the noun combines with another determinative or an adjective. Thus Albanian may, for example, use the possessive (i.e. definite reference marker), with a noun in definite form. Similarly both the noun in the genitive (expressing a possessive relation), and the head noun can have a definite form. The

form of an ordinal and adjective may differ according to its position relative to the noun: definite noun + indefinite ordinal/adjective or definite ordinal/adjective + indefinite noun. As might be expected, the use of the definite article/form varies in English and Albanian idioms.

As regards the Albanian nouns with generic reference, the elicitation test showed that English and Albanian agree in using the definite article/form with singular countable nouns. However, they differ in generic plural nouns and singular non-count nouns: while English uses the zero article with them, Albanian uses definite forms. The indefinite generic count noun in the singular, alternating with the definite count noun in English (wherever meaning allows it), only rarely occurs in Albanian, which uses only the definite form here in a subject position. Definite forms prevail in most other types of generic uses in Albanian.

The analysis of the category of definiteness with Albanian proper names revealed that there is an overwhelming tendency to use them in definite form even where English uses the zero. Thus, while the names of streets, parks, squares, universities and airports tend to be used with the zero (null) article in English, in Albanian they have definite forms. With other categories, such as the names of theaters, museums, picture galleries, concert halls and clubs, both English and Albanian use the definite article/form. Rather unexpectedly, however, the names of cinemas and some hotels have an indefinite form in Albanian (although the former are usually preceded by the word *kinema* with a definite form, and the latter are foreign uninflected names). With anthroponyms, the usage is rather complex, the use of definite and indefinite forms with first names, surnames and titles is intertwined with inflection (and other categories, such as gender), and dependent on their relative positions.

The second line of investigation, or text-oriented analysis, focuses on the distribution of definite nouns/forms in English and Albanian texts. The first aim was to describe the correlation between definite reference nouns in an English source text and their Albanian equivalents, seeking to find out to what extent the English definite nouns are matched by Albanian definite nouns. In order to get a balanced picture, the roles of the English and Albanian texts are then reversed; the Albanian passage is used as a source text and the English one as a target text so as to find out how many of the Albanian definite nouns are matched by the English nouns with the definite article. The idea behind is that the closer the systems of using definite nouns in English and Albanian are, the greater the correlation in source and target texts should be. Finally, prompted by the results of this correlation, the distribution of in/definiteness of all common nouns in the sample texts is examined. The same procedure was repeated with a different pair of source and translation texts to ensure the results are not skewed and text specific.

Comparison of the equivalents matching the nouns with the definite article/form in the source text sample (Table 35) showed a marked difference between the results according to whether the source language was English or Albanian. While the English definite nouns were matched by definite Albanian noun equivalents in 84.7 %, the Albanian definite nouns are matched by English equivalents by mere 51.1 % on average. Clearly Albanian quite often uses definite form nouns where English has nouns with indefinite determinatives.

On the basis of this finding the two pairs of source-translation texts were surveyed once again to ascertain the distribution and mutual proportion of both the definite and the indefinite reference nouns in them. The results show that in the English and the Albanian texts this proportion markedly differs. In the English texts the average percentage of definite and indefinite reference nouns is 53.2 % and 46.8 % respectively (the ratio of close to 1:1). In the Albanian texts this percentage is 73.4 % and 26.6 % respectively (the ratio of almost 3:1). In other words, the results suggest that Albanian uses definite reference nouns, mainly nouns with definite forms, conspicuously more frequently than English, and conversely the indefinite forms of nouns in Albanian are used significantly less often than the indefinite article and zero in English. Although these findings are based on just two pairs of parallel texts, they are arrived at by examining the total of 1170 English common nouns (Marcuse text, 522 common nouns; Rowling text, 648 common nouns) and 1194 Albanian common nouns (Marcuse text, 556 common nouns; Rowling text, 638 common nouns). The results are thus numerically non-negligible.

Despite Newmark et al.'s (1982, 154) claim that definiteness in Albanian corresponds roughly to the definite-indefinite distinction in English (although there are significant differences), there are hints even in his description of this category that the Albanian category of definiteness exhibits idiosyncracies that, as we believe, indicates that its status is different from that in English. Here are some of the notable facts: the definite form noun regularly combines with demonstratives and possessives; the uses of indefinite nouns are described in largely syntactic terms while the uses of definite nouns are described in semantic terms. Finally, proper names are described by Newmark as using both definite and indefinite forms basically in the same way as common nouns do, differing (understandably), only in avoiding the use of determiners such as demonstratives and possessives.

It makes sense that in the system-oriented analysis, the English nouns with the definite article, whether common nouns with nongeneric and generic reference or proper names, generally corresponded to the Albanian definite form nouns. More than that, the Albanian definite form nouns were used even where English would use the indefinite or zero article. Combining these hints with the findings from the text-oriented analysis about the use of in/definite nouns in Albanian and

English in parallel texts, that is in the same pairs of source-translation texts, we believe that Newmark's claim about the correspondence between the Albanian and English category of definiteness needs to be, at least partially, revised. Quite simply, in the same sample text there are too many definite nouns and too few indefinite nouns in Albanian compared to English where the definite and indefinite nouns tend to be in balance. It follows from this that Albanian usually has no problem to match English nouns with the definite article with definite form nouns, while English quite often must use indefinite nouns (with *al/some/zero*), where Albanian uses definite forms.

The fact that these tendencies are found in two different types of texts is a strong indication that they are of a systemic nature. On the whole, the comparison of the operation of in/definiteness in English and Albanian texts seems to confirm Demiraj's (1972) position (see 1.3.3):

in/definiteness does not appear to be a merely formal morphological distinction as many Albanian grammars maintain. However, neither is Demiraj's belief that it is *primarily* based on semantic opposition entirely in keeping with the results of the comparison. In both English and Albanian in/definiteness is expressed obligatorily (which makes it a grammatical feature), but the degree to which the distribution of definite articles/forms depends on semantic and contextual information is apparently different. The analysis of the parallel texts suggests that the semantic and contextual factors are considerably stronger in English compared to Albanian, though they are not completely irrelevant in Albanian, which means that the category is not a merely formal morphological distinction here.

To put it differently, the findings suggest that while in both languages the marking of in/definiteness is obligatory, in English the starting point in discourse is typically indefinite reference which changes into definite reference as required by the co-text. On the other hand, in Albanian the definite noun is something of a default and the noun assumes indefinite form basically and mainly in syntactically defined positions or when preceded by the indefinite article *një* which as a lexical marker of indefiniteness appears when the context explicitly demands it. So, unlike in English where we find an intricate interplay between definite and indefinite reference markers which is determined by (extralinguistic) context and co-text, in Albanian the semantic nuances reflecting the contextual and co-textual factors appear to be heavily suppressed and the in/definite marking has to a large extent (but not entirely) become a formal feature dependent on syntax rather than semantics (as is primarily the case in English). Thus although both the Albanian and the English speaker has to choose between the definite form/article and the indefinite form/article, the English speaker will choose between them primarily on the basis of co-text/context (i.e. semantics). The Albanian speaker, on the other hand, is constrained not only by context/co-text but also, and

perhaps primarily, by the syntactic position/function of the noun. It is as if the Albanian noun automatically takes a definite form unless some kind of specific reference needs to be explicitly conveyed by means of an independent determiner that will combine with either a definite or indefinite form noun as required by usage. This hypothesis seems to explain quite well the findings both from the system- and text-oriented investigation and the features of the Albanian category of definiteness as Newmark et al. describes it.

Naturally, a tentative hypothesis suggesting that in/definiteness expressed by declension in Albanian is largely, but not completely, a formal category rather than a predominantly context/co-text dependent (semantic) one as in English has to be tested on considerably more data than it was possible in this dissertation. All the more so, as such a claim has not to our knowledge been explicitly made and demonstrated in the literature on Albanian so far. Even so, from the initial assumption that the two systems of expressing definiteness in Albanian and English will be largely parallel and similar, the investigation led us to the conclusion that it is not quite the case. Whether eventually proved or not, however, this conclusion may open up new possibilities and topics for research goals that will be worth following. One such topic is the interplay between the definite and indefinite forms of the constituents of an extended noun phrase in Albanian.

Résumé

Základní myšlenkou této disertační práce je srovnání formálního vyjadřování kategorie určenosti v albánštině a angličtině. Text je dělen na dva větší celky, tvořené částí teoretickou a empirickou.

Část teoretická se prodrobněji věnuje nejprve obecné definici kategorie určenosti jako celku, a to jak z pohledu filosofického, tak i z pohledu obecně lingvistického. Poté se práce zabývá otázkami reference, vztahu určenosti a vývojem členského systému v obou jazycích samostatně. Jak se již ukazuje v teoretické části práce, situace v albánštině a angličtině je poněkud rozdílná. Zatímco v albánštině není ještě status ne/určenosti z teoretického hlediska zcela vyřešen a řada jevů a otázek souvisejících s touto kategorií je stále předmětem debaty, v angličtině je situace výrazně odlišná. Pro angličtinu platí, že kategorii ne/určenosti byla věnována značná dávka pozornosti již poměrně dlouhou dobu. Svědčí o tom nejen důkladné zpracování určenosti v akademických i referenčních mluvnících angličtiny, ale i množství monografií a článků na toto téma.

V empirické části práce je předložen vlastní výzkum kategorie určenosti v albánštině založený na kontrastu s poznatky o této kategorii v současné angličtině. Tento výzkum byl prováděn na dvou rovinách: systémové a textové.

V rozboru orientovaném na systémové shody a odlišnosti byl na základě anglických gramatik vytvořen popisný aparát, který zahrnoval výskyty a použití určité reference v angličtině. Tento systém byl aplikován na albánštinu a to tak, že případy, ve kterých angličtina vykazuje určitý člen, byly porovnávány s analogickými výskyty v albánštině, abychom zjistili, zda se zkoumaný jazyk chová ve stejných situacích shodně či odlišně. Data použitá v této části výzkumu pocházela z albánského korpusu, který byl vytvořen pro účely této práce, internetu, paralelní anglicko-albánské dvojice textů (Steinbeckův román *Of Mice and Men* a jeho albánský překlad) a z dotazníku zadaného rodilým mluvčím albánštiny. Systémově orientovaná část výzkumu byla rozdělena do tří oddílů: první se zaměřuje na albánská obecná podstatná jména a jejich negenerické užití, druhá část se zabývá albánskými obecnými podstatnými jmény a jejich generickým užitím (východiskem byl fakt, že generická reference v angličtině je prototypicky vyjádřena pomocí určitého členu, tudíž se nabízela otázka, zda i albánština v těchto případech využívá forem určitých, případně jak tento jazyk generickou referenci vůbec vyjadřuje), a konečně, třetí oddíl se věnoval užití určitých tvarů u jmen vlastních. Užití určitého členu u vlastních jmen v angličtině je poměrně komplikovanou záležitostí, a proto jedním z cílů práce bylo prozkoumat situaci v albánštině.

Z hlediska užití obecných jmen s určitou negenerickou referencí se zdá, že albánský určitý člen/tvar se objevuje se shodnými (pod)typy, jak je tomu v angličtině, určitá reference např. vyplývá

z katafory, anafory, jedinečnosti v závislosti na kotextu, kontextu, modifikaci, apozici, atd.

Objevují se tu však i výjimky, nejčastější z nich je výskyt akuzativní předložky *në/na*, po které se v albánštině objevuje tvar neurčitý, v místech, kde angličtina vykazuje člen určitý. Albánština se také liší od angličtiny v případech, kdy se podstatné jméno pojí s jiným determinátorem nebo zájmenem. Pro albánštinu je například možné, aby kombinovala přivlasňovací zájmeno s podstatným jménem ve tvaru určitém. Dalším rozdílem je také to, že podstatné jméno v genitivu (zpravidla vyjadřující posesivní význam) a jméno řídící se mohou objevit ve tvaru určitém. Tvar řadových číslovek a některých zájmen se může změnit v závislosti na tom, v jaké pozici stojí s ohledem na podstatné jméno, což lze shrnout následujícím schematem: určité podstatné jméno + neurčitá řadová číslovka/zájmeno nebo určitá řadová číslovka/zájmeno + neurčité podstatné jméno. Jak se dá očekávat, užití určitého členu a určité formy se nepřekrývá v anglických a albánských idiomech, které se v jednom i druhém jazyce vyznačují různou mírou arbitrárnosti.

Co se týče albánských jmen s generickou referencí, srovnávací test ukázal, že angličtina a albánština se shodují v užití určitého členu/určité formy, pokud se jedná o počítatelné podstatné jméno v singuláru. Oba jazyky se ale chovají různě v případech, kdy se jedná o generické užití jmen v plurálu a nepočítatelných jmen v singuláru. Zatímco angličtina v těchto případech užívá nulový člen, v albánštině nacházíme tvary určité. Počítatelná podstatná jména v singuláru s neurčitým členem v generickém významu, která v angličtině alternují (dovoluje-li to význam) s podstatnými jmény se členem určitým, se v albánštině objevují jen zřídka, a to v pozici podmětu. U ostatních typů užití generické reference v albánštině dominují určité tvary.

Rozbor kategorie určenosti u vlastních podstatných jmen v albánštině ukázal, že tento jazyk má převládající tendenci užívat tvarů určitých, a to i v případech, kde se v angličtině vyskytuje nulový člen. To znamená, že například jména ulic, parků, náměstí, univerzit a letišť, která se v angličtině běžně užívají s nulovým členem, se v albánštině naopak vyskytují s tvarem určitým. Ostatní kategorie, jako např. názvy divadel, muzeí, obrazových galerií, koncertních sálů a klubů se v obou jazycích objevují shodně s určitým členem/tvarem. Je však poněkud překvapivé, že názvy kin a některých hotelů se v albánštině objevily s tvarem neurčitým. V prvním případě bylo součástí názvu slovo *kinema/kino*, v tom druhém případě se jednalo o podstatná jména cizího původu, která nepodléhají skloňování. U antroponym je pak užití určitých/neurčitých tvarů závislé na komplexnějších faktorech. Proto je tedy výskyt určitých a neurčitých forem u křestních jmen, příjmení a titulů ve vzájemné kombinaci značně ovlivněn typem skloňování (a jinými kategoriemi, např. rodem) a také vzájemnou pozicí.

Druhá linie výzkumné části, tzn. textově orientovaného rozboru, se soustředila na distribuci

určitých členů/forem v anglických a albánských textech. Pro srovnání byly vybrány dva páry paralelních textů (originál-překlad) z knihy H. Marcuse *The One-Dimensional Man* a J.K. Rowlingové, *Harry Potter and the Sorcerer's Stone* (délka anglických výňatků byla diktována snahou, aby počet substantiv s určitým členem si v nich zhruba odpovídal) a jejich albánských překladů. Původním cílem bylo popsat korelaci mezi substantivy s určitou referencí v anglickém zdrojovém textu a jejich ekvivalenty v albánském textu. To mělo za účel zjistit, zda se výrazné podobnosti v užívání určitého členu/určitých substantivních tvarů v obou jazycích zjištěné při systémovém srovnávání potvrdí i v paralelních překladových textech. Předpoklad zněl, že anglická podstatná jména s určitým členem se v paralelních textech budou v převážné míře překládat do albánštiny pomocí určitých tvarů. Nejprve byl proveden kvalitativní rozbor určité reference anglických substantiv v Marcusově textu a jejich albánských ekvivalentů. Kvantitativní výsledky srovnávání ve směru z angličtiny do albánštiny ale naznačily, že bude zapotřebí směr zkoumání také otočit: albánský text byl tedy použit jako výchozí a anglický překlad jako text cílový. To posloužilo ke zjištění počtu anglických podstatných jmen s určitým členem, která v paralelním textu odpovídala albánským podstatným jménům s určitým tvarem. Tento postup vycházel z pracovního předpokladu, že vztah mezi oběma systémy vyjadřování určité reference je symetrický a že substantiva s určitou referencí budou v textech vysoce korelovat. Vzhledem k tomu, že výsledky srovnávání ve směru z albánštiny do angličtiny tento předpoklad nepotvrdily, bylo třeba stejný postup zopakovat pro jinou dvojici překladových textů, které se žánrově a stylisticky lišily od těch prvních, aby se vyloučila možnost, že výsledky jsou ovlivněné charakterem textů.

Když byl porovnán počet všech substantiv s určitou referencí ve výchozím textu s počtem všech substantiv s určitou referencí v cílovém textu, ukázalo se, že existuje značný rozdíl mezi tím, když je výchozím textem angličtina nebo albánština. Zatímco v obou párech textů měla anglická podstatná jména s určitým členem ve výchozím textu v albánském cílovém textu v průměru 84,7% ekvivalentů s tvarem určitým, albánským podstatným jménům s určitou formou ve výchozím textu odpovídaly anglické ekvivalenty s určitou referencí v průměru pouze v 51,1% případů. Naznačovalo to, že albánština často používá určité formy tam, kde angličtina má výrazy s neurčitou referencí.

Logicky se proto nabízelo podívat se na celkovou distribuci substantiv jak s určitou, tak neurčitou referencí v anglických a albánských textech. Výsledky ukázaly, že se proporce v obou jazycích značně liší. Ve zkoumaných anglických textech je výskyt jmen s určitým členem v průměru 53,2 % a těch se členem neurčitým 46,8 % (celkový poměr se tedy blíží 1:1). V albánských textech se objevuje 73,4 % jmen ve tvaru určitém a 26,6 % má tvar neurčitý (v poměru

téměř 3:1). Tato zjištění potvrdila, že albánština užívá jmen s určitou referencí, a to zejména jmen s tvarem určitým, mnohem častěji než tomu je v angličtině. Naopak platí, že ve zkoumaných albánských textech se jmen s tvarem neurčitým vyskytuje mnohem méně, než kolik v anglických textech nacházíme substantiv s neurčitým nebo nulovým členem. Přestože tyto poměry byly zjišťovány pouze na dvou párech paralelních textů, celkový počet obecných jmen ve zkoumaných anglických textech činí 1170 (522 v Marcusově textu, 648 v textu Rowlingové), v albánských textech jde o 1194 obecných jmen (Marcuse, 556, Rowlingová 638). Nejedná se tedy o výsledky zcela zanedbatelné.

Newmark a kol. ve své mluvnici albánštiny (1982, 154) sice tvrdí, že flektivní kategorie určenosti u substantiv v albánštině zhruba odpovídá vymezení určenosti-neurčenosti v angličtině (i když připouštějí některé důležité rozdíly ve způsobu užívání), avšak i v jejich popisu existují signály, že fungování albánské kategorie určenosti vykazuje rysy, které ji od určenosti v angličtině odlišují víc, než by se na první pohled zdálo. O které rysy zmiňované Newmarkem a kol. konkrétně jde: tvary neurčité se v albánštině pravidelně pojí s ukazovacími zájmeny a demonstrativy; užití jmen s neurčitou formou je popsáno na základě syntaktických vztahů, zatímco užívání jmen s tvarem určitým na základě sémantických vztahů. Z popisu albánské kategorie určenosti v Newmarkovi a kol. dále vyplývá, že u vlastních jmen se v albánštině užívá ne/určitých tvarů stejným způsobem jako u jmen obecných, s výjimkou determinátorů jako jsou demonstrativa a posesiva.

Vzhledem k této skutečnosti a vzhledem ke zjištěním v textovém rozboru se jeví jako zcela pochopitelné, že v systémově orientované analýze anglickým jménům s určitým členem s negenerickou referencí a vlastním jménům s generickou referencí z velké části odpovídala albánská jména s určitým tvarem. I to, že albánská jména měla určitou formou i v případech, kdy jim odpovídaly anglické ekvivalenty s neurčitým či nulovým členem. Tyto poznatky naznačují, že tvrzení Newmarka a kol. o překrývání kategorie určenosti v obou jazycích, je třeba, alespoň částečně, upravit. Z toho, že ve stejném vzorku textu se v albánštině oproti angličtině objevuje daleko více určitých a daleko méně neurčitých podstatných jmen (angličtina má poměr výskytu ne/určitá jména v rovnováze) vyplývá, že zatímco albánština běžně překládá anglická substantiva s určitým členem substantivy s určitým tvarem, ve směru z albánštiny do angličtiny jsou anglickými ekvivalenty albánských určitých jmen v daleko vyšší míře substantiva s neurčitou referencí (*a/some/0*).

Fakt, že tyto tendence byly nalezeny ve dvou stylisticky různých párech textů, je silným indikátorem, že se jedná spíše o systémovou záležitost než o náhodu. Obecně se zdá, že srovnání

výskytu kategorie ne/určenosti v anglických a albánských textech potvrzuje Demirajův názor (1972), že užívání ne/určitých tvarů není v albánštině pouze formální morfologickou záležitostí, jak soudí mnoho albánských gramatik, Zároveň ale ani jeho tvrzení, že jde o primárně sémantickou opozici, zcela neodpovídá našim výsledkům. V angličtině i albánštině je ne/určenost vyjadřována obligatorně (což z ní činí gramatickou kategorii), ale míra, do jaké je distribuce určitého členu/flexe závislá na kontextuální a sémantické informaci, se zjevně liší. Z analýzy paralelních textů vyplývá, že kontextuální a sémantické faktory hrají v angličtině daleko větší roli než v albánštině, ačkoli ani zde nejsou zcela irelevantní, což znamená, že určenost není pouze formálním znakem.

Z výsledků analýzy paralelních textů lze usuzovat i na další rozdíl. Ačkoli je v obou jazycích označování ne/určitosti povinné, strategie používání této kategorie je v každém z nich jiná. Zatímco v angličtině se zdá být výchozím bodem neurčitá reference, která se na základě kontextu mění v referenci určitou, v albánštině je situace opačná. V albánštině budou substantiva v textu primárně v určitém tvaru, kdežto jména s neurčitým tvarem se objevují převážně jen ve vymezených syntaktických pozicích nebo v případech, kde jim předchází neurčitý člen *një*, který se objevuje jako lexikální prvek neurčitosti, vyžaduje-li to explicitně kontext. Albánské substantivum bude mít tedy tvar určitý až do okamžiku, kdy je třeba vyjádřit nějaký druh specifické reference, která vyžaduje užití samostatného determinátoru, jenž se pojí buď s určitou, nebo s neurčitou formou dle užití.

Na rozdíl od angličtiny, kde dochází k jemné a složité interakci mezi signály určenosti a neurčenosti, která je výsledkem souhry extralingvistických a kontextuálních faktorů, v albánštině je situace podstatně jednodušší a různé sémantické odstíny odrážející kontextové a kotextové faktory se zdají býti značně zredukovány. V albánštině, jinými slovy, je označování ne/určenosti spíše (i když zdaleka ne zcela) rysem formálním a neurčitá reference závisí primárně na syntaxi, zatímco v angličtině volba determinátoru primárně (i když také ne zcela) závisí na sémantice (situaci a kontextu). Jak albánský, tak anglický mluvčí musí vybírat mezi ne/určitým determinátorem/flexí, ale zatímco anglický mluvčí tak činí především na základě kotextu/kontextu (významu), albánský mluvčí se rozhoduje pro neurčité tvary primárně podle syntaktické pozice příslušného jména. Tyto úvahy vcelku adekvátně vysvětlují výsledky obou typů rozboru, jak systémově orientovaného, tak i textově orientovaného. Naše zjištění také doplňují a ozřejmují realizaci kategorie určenosti v albánštině, jak ji popisuje Newmark a kol. (1982).

Přirozeně, hypotéza, že kategorie ne/určenosti v albánštině, vyjadřovaná pomocí deklinačního systému, je převážně kategorie formální a jen v omezené míře ovlivněná situačními a kontextuálními faktory, zatímco v angličtině jde o převážně funkční kategorii, jejíž uplatnění závisí

na situaci, kontextu a sémantice, bude muset být ještě ověřena na větším objemu dat s hlubší analýzou, než nabízí tato disertační práce. Nejdůležitějším zjištěním práce tak je, že výchozí pracovní předpoklad, totiž že kategorie určenosti v albánštině a angličtině budou paralelní (symetrické), což umožní smysluplné srovnávání jejich fungování v obou jazycích, byl výsledky výzkumu dosti podstatně modifikován. Nicméně tento závěr otevírá nová témata a možnosti stanovit další výzkumné cíle. Jedním z nich je například problematika kombinatoriky určitých a neurčitých tvarů konstituentů vícečlenných jmenných frází v albánštině.

References

- Abbott, B. (2005): 'Definiteness and Indefiniteness'. In Horn, L.R. and Ward, G. (eds) *The Handbook of Pragmatics*, Blackwell Publishers, London.
- Abbott, B. (2010): *Reference*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Allen, S. W. (1959): *Living English Structure*. London: Longman.
- de Angély, R. (1998): *Grammaire albanaise comparée*. Paris: Gerfau SN.
- Biber, D. et al. (1991): *Longman Grammar of Spoken and Written English*. Harlow: Longman.
- Boissin, H. (1998): *Grammaire de l'albanais moderne*. Paris: L'Harmattan.
- Bokshi, B. (1980): *Rruga e formimit të fleksionit të sotëm nominal të shqipes*. Pristina: ASHAK.
- Bokshi, B. (1984): *Prapavendosja e nyjës në gjuhët ballkanike*. Prishtinë: Rilindja.
- Buchholz, O. and Fielder, W. (1987): *Albanische Grammatik*. Leipzig: Verlag Encklopädie.
- Camaj, M. (1969): *Lehrbuch der Albanischen Sprache*. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz.
- Camaj, M. (1984): *Albanian Grammar*. Wiesbaden: Otto Harrassowitz.
- Chapman, S. (2000): *Philosophy of linguistics. An Introduction*. London: Routledge.
- Chesterman, A. (1991): *On Definiteness*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Christophersen, P. (1939) *The Articles: A Study of Their Theory and Use in English*. Einar Munksgaard: Copenhagen.
- Coates, R. (2006): 'Properhood'. *Language* 82, 356-382.
- Conev B. (1940): *Istorijska na bälgarskija ezik II*. Sofia.
- Čermák, F. (2004): *Jazyk a jazykověda*. Praha: Karolinum.
- Demiraj, Sh. (1964): *Morfologjia dhe sintaksa e gjuhës së sotme shqipe I, II*. Tirana: Universiteti shtetëror i Tiranës.
- Demiraj, Sh. (1972): *Çështje të sistemit emëror të gjuhës shqipe*. Tirana: Mihal Duri.
- Demiraj, Sh. (1985): *Gramatikë historike e gjuhës shqipe*. Tirana: Universiteti i Tiranës, Fakulteti i Historisë dhe i filologjisë.
- De Mulder, W. and Carlier, A. (2012): 'The grammaticalization of definite articles'. In: Heine, B and Narrog, H. (eds) *The Oxford Handbook of Grammaticalization*. Oxford University Press, Oxford.
- Devitt, M. (1981) *Designation*. New York: Columbia University Press.
- Devitt, M. and Hanley, R. (eds.) (2006): *Blackwell Guide to the Philosophy of Language*. London:

Blackwell Publishers.

Domi, M. et al. (2002): *Gramatika e gjuhës shqipe – Vëllimi I. – Morfologjia*. Tirana:

Shtypshkronja Maluka.

Donnellan, K. (1966): 'Reference and Definite Descriptions'. *Philosophical Review* 75, 281-304.

Dryer, M. S. (1989): 'Article–noun order'. *Chicago Linguistic Society* 25, 83–97.

Dryer, M. S. and Haspelmath, M. (eds.) (2013): *The World Atlas of Language Structures Online*.

Leipzig: Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology. (Available online at

<http://wals.info>, Accessed on 2014-10-27.).

Dušková, L. (1999): *Studies in the English Language*. Part I, II. Praha: Karolinum.

Dušková, L. et al. (1988, 2003): *Mluvnice současné angličtiny na pozadí češtiny*. Praha: Academia.

Ejntrej, G. (1982): *Albanskij jazyk. Učebnoe posobie*. Leningrad: Leningrad University Press.

Elsie, R. (2004): *Historical Dictionary of Albania*. Lanham, Maryland and Oxford: The Scarecrow

Press, Inc.

Frege, G. (1892a): 'On Sense and Meaning'. In Geach, P. and Black, M. (eds), *Translations from the Philosophical Writings of Gottlob Frege*, 3rd edn, Oxford: Blackwell.

Frege, G. (1892b): 'On Concept and Object'. In Geach, P. and Black, M. (eds), *Translations from the Philosophical Writings of Gottlob Frege*, 3rd edn, Oxford: Blackwell.

Frege, G. (1952): 'On Sense and Reference'. In Geach, P. and Black, M. (eds. and trans.), *Translations from the philosophical writings of Gottlob Frege*. Oxford: Blackwell, 56–78.

Translation of Frege 1892, *Über Sinn und Bedeutung*, *Zeitschrift für Philosophie und philosophische Kritik*, 100, 25–50.

Georgiev, V.I. (1966): 'Le problème de l'union linguistique balkanique'. *Actes du Premier Congrès Inter. des Etudes Sud-est européenne* VI. 5.

Gjinari, J. (1972): 'Mbi nyjën e prapme të shqipes në aspektin e lidhjes gjuhësore iliro-shqiptare'. *Studime filologjike* 4.

Gordon, E. M. and Krilova, I. P. (1964): *The Use of Articles in Modern English*. Moscow.

Guillaume, G. (1919/1975): *Le problème de l'article et sa solution dans la langue française*. Paris: Hachette.

Hamp, E. P. (1972): 'Albanian'. In Sebeok, Thomas A. (ed.), *Current Trends in Linguistics*, Vol. 9 (1972), pp.1626–92, a review of work since 1918.

Hawkins, J. A. (1978): *Definiteness and Indefiniteness*. London: Croom Helm.

- Hawkins, J. A. (1991): 'On (in)Definite Articles: Implicatures and (un)Grammaticality Prediction.' *Journal of Linguistics* 27, 405– 42.
- Heim, I. (1988): *The semantics of definite and indefinite noun phrases*. New York: Garland Pub.
- Hewson, J. (1972): *Article and Noun in English*. The Hague: Mouton.
- Huddleston, R. and Pullum, G. R. (2002): *The Cambridge Grammar of the English Language*. Cambridge: University Press Cambridge.
- Jespersen, O. (1924): *Philosophy of grammar*. London: Allen & Unwin.
- Jespersen, O. (1949): *A Modern English Grammar on Historical Principles*, Part VII: Syntax. London: Allen & Unwin.
- Kałuża, H. (1981): *The Use of Articles in Contemporary English*. Heidelberg: Groos.
- Kopitar, J. (1829): 'Albanische, walachische und bulgarische Sprache'. *Wiener Jahrbucher der Literatur* 46: 59-106.
- Koslicki, K. (2008): 'Natural Kinds and Natural Kind Terms.' In *Philosophy Compass* 3/4, 789–802.
- Krámský, J. (1972): *The article and the concept of definiteness in language*. The Hague: Mouton.
- Kripke, S. (1980): *Naming and necessity*. Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press. Previously published in D. Davidson and G. Harman (eds.), *Semantics of natural language*. Dordrecht: Reidel (1972), 253–355.
- La Piana, M. (1949): *Studi linguistici albanesi vol. I*. Palermo: Varia.
- Lycan, W. G. (2000): *Philosophy of Language. A Contemporary Introduction*. London: Routledge.
- Lyons, C. (1995): *Proper nouns, generics, and the count–mass distinction*. Paper presented at the ESRI Research Seminar, University of Salford.
- Lyons, C. (2003): *Definiteness*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Mann, S. E. (1932): *A Short Albanian Grammar*. London: David Nutt.
- Mann, S. E. (1977): *An Albanian Historical Grammar*. Hamburg: Helmut Buske Verlag.
- Meyer, G. (1892): *Albanesische Studien, III*. Wien: Gerold.
- Miletic, L. (1889): *O članu v bulgarskom jeziku*. Zagreb.
- Mill, J. S. (1843/1973): *A System of Logic*. London: Longman.
- Newmark, L. (1957): *Structural Grammar of Albanian*. Bloomington: Indiana University.
- Newmark, L. (1999): *Oxford Albanian-English Dictionary*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Newmark, L., Hubbard, P. and Prifti, P. (1982): *Standard Albanian: A Reference Grammar for*

- Students*. Stanford: Stanford University Press.
- Pedersen, H. (1900): 'Die gutturale im Albanesischen'. *Zeitschrift für vergleichende Sprachforschung* 36. 277-340.
- Piotrovskij, R.G. (1960): *Formirovanie artikla v romanskih jazykah*. Moskva – Leningrad.
- Pisani, V. (1969): 'Nyja e mbrapme në gjuhën shqipe dhe çështje të lidhura me të'. *Konf. e dytë e studimeve alb. III*. 125.
- Popela, J. (1985): 'K otázce kombinace typologických vlastností v jazycích'. *Bulletin ruského jazyka a literatury XXVI*. 37-67.
- Popela, J. (1988): 'K porovnávací typologické charakteristice současné ruštiny a češtiny' [To the comparative typological characteristics of contemporary Russian and Czech], *ČsRus* 32, 49-55.
- Popela, J. (2006): *Skaličkova jazyková typologie*. Brno: Masarykova Univerzita.
- Putnam, H. (1975): "The Meaning of 'Meaning'." In Gunderson K. (ed.) (1975) *Minnesota Studies in the Philosophy of Science*, Vol. 8: Language, Mind, and Knowledge. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.
- Quirk, R. et al. (1985): *A Comprehensive Grammar of the English Language*. London: Longman.
- Riza, S. (1965): *Emrat në shqipen: sistemi i rasave dhe tipet e lakimit*. Tiranë.
- Russell, B. (1905): 'On denoting.' *Mind* 14, 479-493.
- Russell, B. (1910–11): 'Knowledge by acquaintance and knowledge by description'. *Proceedings of the Aristotelian Society* (8): 108-128.
- Russell, B. (1918): 'The Philosophy of Logical Atomism'. In Marsh, R. C (ed.) (1956). *Logic and Knowledge*. London: Allen & Unwin.
- Russell, B. (1919): *Introduction to mathematical philosophy*. London: Allen & Unwin.
- Searle, J. R. (1958): 'Proper Names.' *Mind*, 67, 166-173.
- Sgall, P. (1971): 'On the notion "type of language" '. *Travaux linguistiques de Prague* 4. 75–87.
- Sgall, P. (1975): 'Die Sprachtypen in der klassischen und der neueren Typologie'. *Linguistics* 144, 119-123.
- Sgall, P. (1986): 'Classical typology and modern linguistics'. *Folia Linguistica* 20(1-2). 15-28.
- Sgall, P. (1993): 'Typy jazyků a jejich základní vlastnosti'. *Slovo a slovesnost* 54. 271-277.
- Sgall, P. (1995): 'Prague School Typology'. In Masayoshi, S. and Bynon, T. (eds.). *Approaches to language typology*. Oxford: Oxford University Press. 49–84.

- Skalička, V. (2004): *Souborné dílo – II.díl*. Praha: Karolinum.
- Spencer, A. (2007): “The possessum-agreement construction or ‘Does Albanian have a genitive case?’”. In *The Minimalist Muse*: 223-250.
- Sperber, D. and Wilson, D. (1986): *Relevance: Communication and Cognition*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Strawson, P. F. (1950): ‘On Referring’. *Mind* 59, 320-344.
- Sweet, H. (1892): *A New English Grammar. Logical and Historical*. London: The Clarendon Press.
- Šrámek, R. (1999): *Úvod do obecné onomastiky*. Brno: Masarykova univerzita.
- Thomai, J. (2006): *Leksikologjia e gjuhës shqipe*. Tirana: Botimet Toena.
- Tanesini, A. (2007): *Philosophy of Language A-Z*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press.
- Vaillant, A. (1950-1977): *Grammaire comparée des langues slaves*. Tome I – V. Lyon: I.A.C.
- Yotsukura, S. (1970): *The Articles in English: A Structural Analysis of Usage*. The Hague: Mouton.
- Zymberi, I. (1991): *Colloquial Albanian*. London: Routledge.

Parallel translation texts:

- Marcuse Herbert (1964, ed. used 2002): *The One-Dimensional Man*. London and New York: Routledge.
- Marcuse, H. (2006): *Njeriu njëdimensional*. Tirana: Seria Filozofi/Sociologji/Shkenca Politike.
Translator: Gaqo Karashaki.
- Rowling, J.K. (1998): *Harry Potter and the Sorcerer’s Stone*. New York: Scholastic Press.
- Rowling, J.K. (2002): *Harry Potter dhe guri filozofal*. Tirana: Dituria. Translator: Amik Kasoraho.
- Steinbeck, J. (1993) *Of Mice and Men*. Penguin Books Ltd.
- Steinbeck, J. (2003) *Njerëz dhe min j*. Tirana: Ideart. Translator: Fredi Proko.

Appendix

H. Marcuse text (English version) – definite occurrences

Herbert Marcuse (2002) <i>One-Dimensional Man</i>
<p>2⁰⁰¹ THE CLOSING OF⁰⁰² THE POLITICAL UNIVERSE</p> <p>⁰⁰³ The society of total mobilization, which takes shape in⁰⁰⁴ the most advanced areas of industrial civilization, combines in productive union⁰⁰⁵ the features of⁰⁰⁶ the Welfare State and⁰⁰⁷ the Warfare State. Compared with its predecessors, it is indeed a "new society." Traditional trouble spots are being cleaned out or isolated, disrupting elements taken in hand⁰⁰⁸ the main trends are familiar: concentration of⁰⁰⁹ the national economy on⁰¹⁰ the needs of⁰¹¹ the big corporations, with⁰¹² the government as a stimulating, supporting, and sometimes even controlling force; hitching of this economy to a world-wide system of military alliances, monetary arrangements, technical assistance and development schemes; gradual assimilation of blue-collar and white-collar population, of leadership types in business and labor, of leisure activities and aspirations in different social classes; fostering of a pre-established harmony between scholarship and⁰¹³ the national purpose; invasion of⁰¹⁴ the private household by⁰¹⁵ the togetherness of public opinion; opening of⁰¹⁶ the bedroom to⁰¹⁷ the media of mass communication.</p> <p>In⁰¹⁸ the political sphere, this trend manifests itself in a marked unification or convergence of opposites. Bipartisanship in foreign policy overrides competitive group interests under⁰¹⁹ the threat of international communism, and spreads to domestic policy, where⁰²⁰ the programs of⁰²¹ the big parties become ever more undistinguishable, even in⁰²² the degree of hypocrisy and in⁰²³ the odor of⁰²⁴ the cliches. This unification of opposites bears upon⁰²⁵ the very possibilities of social change where it embraces those strata on whose back⁰²⁶ the system progresses—that is,⁰²⁷ the very classes whose existence once embodied⁰²⁸ the opposition to⁰²⁹ the system as a whole.</p> <p>In⁰³⁰ the United States, one notices⁰³¹ the collusion and⁰³² alliance between business and organized labor; in <i>Labor Looks at Labor: A Conversation</i>, published by⁰³³ the Center for⁰³⁴ the Study of Democratic Institutions in 1963, we are told that:</p> <p>"What has happened is that⁰³⁵ the union has become almost indistinguishable in its <i>own eyes</i> from⁰³⁶ the corporation. We see⁰³⁷ the phenomenon today of unions and corporations <i>jointly</i> lobbying.⁰³⁸ the union is not going to be able to convince missile workers that⁰³⁹ the company they work for is a fink outfit when both⁰⁴⁰ the union and⁰⁴¹ the corporation are out lobbying for bigger missile contracts and trying to get other defense industries into⁰⁴² the area, or when they jointly appear before Congress and jointly ask that missiles instead of bombers should be built or bombs instead of missiles, depending on what contract they happen to hold."</p>

⁰⁴³The British Labor Party, whose leaders compete with their Conservative counterparts in advancing national interests, is hard put to save even a modest program of partial nationalization. In West Germany, which has outlawed ⁰⁴⁴the Communist Party, ⁰⁴⁵the Social Democratic Party, having officially rejected its Marxist programs, is convincingly proving its respectability. This is ⁰⁴⁶the situation in

⁰⁴⁷the leading industrial countries of ⁰⁴⁸the West. In ⁰⁴⁹the East, ⁰⁵⁰the gradual reduction of direct political controls testifies to increasing reliance on ⁰⁵¹the effectiveness of technological controls as instruments of domination. As for ⁰⁵²the strong Communist parties in France and Italy, they bear witness to ⁰⁵³the general trend of circumstances by adhering to a minimum program which shelves ⁰⁵⁴the revolutionary seizure of power and complies with ⁰⁵⁵the rules of ⁰⁵⁶the parliamentary game.

However, while it is incorrect to consider ⁰⁵⁷the French and Italian parties "foreign" in ⁰⁵⁸the sense of being sustained by a foreign power, there is an unintended kernel of truth in this propaganda: they are foreign inasmuch as they are witnesses of a past (or future?) history in ⁰⁵⁹the present reality. If they have agreed to work within ⁰⁶⁰the framework of ⁰⁶¹the established system, it is not merely on tactical grounds and as short-range strategy, but because their social base has been weakened and their objectives altered by ⁰⁶²the transformation of ⁰⁶³the capitalist system (as have ⁰⁶⁴the objectives of ⁰⁶⁵the Soviet Union which has endorsed this change in policy). These national Communist parties play ⁰⁶⁶the historical role of legal opposition parties "condemned" to be non-radical. They testify to ⁰⁶⁷the depth and ⁰⁶⁸scope of capitalist integration, and to ⁰⁶⁹the conditions which make ⁰⁷⁰the qualitative difference of conflicting interests appear as quantitative differences within ⁰⁷¹the established society.

No analysis in depth seems to be necessary in order to find ⁰⁷²the reasons for these developments. As to ⁰⁷³the West: ⁰⁷⁴the former conflicts within society are modified and arbitrated under ⁰⁷⁵the double (and interrelated) impact of technical progress and international communism. Class struggles are attenuated and "imperialist contradictions" suspended before ⁰⁷⁶the threat from without. Mobilized against this threat, capitalist society shows an internal union and cohesion unknown at previous stages of industrial civilization. It is a cohesion on very material grounds;

mobilization against ⁰⁷⁷the enemy works as a mighty stimulus of production and employment, thus sustaining ⁰⁷⁸the high standard of living.

On these grounds, there arises a universe of administration in which depressions are controlled and conflicts stabilized by ⁰⁷⁹the beneficial effects of growing productivity and threatening nuclear war. Is this stabilization "temporary" in ⁰⁸⁰the sense that it does not affect ⁰⁸¹the roots of ⁰⁸²the conflicts which Marx found in ⁰⁸³the capitalist mode of production (contradiction between private

ownership of ⁰⁸⁴the means of production and social productivity), or is it a transformation of ⁰⁸⁵the antagonistic structure itself, which resolves ⁰⁸⁶the contradictions by making them tolerable? And, if ⁰⁸⁷the second alternative is true, how does it change ⁰⁸⁸the relationship between capitalism and socialism which made ⁰⁸⁹the latter appear ⁰⁹⁰the historical negation of ⁰⁹¹the former?

CONTAINMENT OF SOCIAL CHANGE

⁰⁹²The classical Marxian theory envisages ⁰⁹³the transition from capitalism to socialism as a political revolution: ⁰⁹⁴the proletariat destroys ⁰⁹⁵the political apparatus of capitalism but retains ⁰⁹⁶the technological apparatus, subjecting it to socialization. There is continuity in ⁰⁹⁷the revolution: technological rationality, freed from irrational restrictions and destructions, sustains and consummates itself in ⁰⁹⁸the new society. It is interesting to read a Soviet Marxist statement on this continuity, which is of such vital importance for ⁰⁹⁹the notion of socialism as ¹⁰⁰the determinate negation of capitalism:

"(1) Though ¹⁰¹the development of technology is subject to ¹⁰²the

economic laws of each social formation, it does not, like other economic factors, end with ¹⁰³the cessation of ¹⁰⁴the laws of ¹⁰⁵the formation. When in ¹⁰⁶the process of revolution ¹⁰⁷the old relations of production are broken up, technology remains and, subordinated to ¹⁰⁸the economic laws of ¹⁰⁹the new economic formation, continues to develop further, with added speed. (2) Contrary to ¹¹⁰the development of ¹¹¹the economic basis in antagonistic societies, technology does not develop through leaps but by a gradual accumulation of elements of a new quality, while ¹¹²the elements of ¹¹³the old quality disappear. (3) [irrelevant in this context]."

In advanced capitalism, technical rationality is embodied, in spite of its irrational use, in ¹¹⁴the productive apparatus. This applies not only to mechanized plants, tools, and exploitation of resources, but also to ¹¹⁵the mode of labor as adaptation to and handling of ¹¹⁶the machine process, as arranged by "scientific management." Neither nationalization nor socialization alter by themselves this physical embodiment of technological rationality; on ¹¹⁷the contrary, ¹¹⁸the latter remains a precondition for ¹¹⁹the socialist development of all productive forces.

To be sure, Marx held that organization and direction of ¹²⁰the productive apparatus by ¹²¹the "immediate producers" would introduce a qualitative change in ¹²²the technical continuity: namely, production toward ¹²³the satisfaction of freely developing individual needs. However, to ¹²⁴the degree to which ¹²⁵the established technical apparatus engulfs ¹²⁶the public and ¹²⁷private existence in all spheres of society—that is, becomes ¹²⁸the medium of control and cohesion in a political universe which incorporates ¹²⁹the laboring classes—to that degree would ¹³⁰the qualitative change involve a change in ¹³¹the technological structure itself. And such change would *presuppose* that ¹³²the laboring classes are alienated from this universe

in their very existence, that their consciousness is that of ¹³³the total impossibility to continue to exist in this universe, so that ¹³⁴the

need for qualitative change is a matter of life and death. Thus, ¹³⁵the negation exists prior to ¹³⁶the change itself, ¹³⁷the notion that ¹³⁸the liberating historical forces develop within ¹³⁹the established society is a cornerstone of Marxian theory.

Now it is precisely this new consciousness, this "space within," ¹⁴⁰the space for ¹⁴¹the transcending historical practice, which is being barred by a society in which subjects as well as objects constitute instrumentalities in a whole that has its *raison d'être* in ¹⁴²the accomplishments of its overpowering productivity.

Its supreme promise is an ever-more-comfortable life for an ever-growing number of people who, in a strict sense, cannot imagine a qualitatively different universe of discourse and action, for ¹⁴³the capacity to contain and manipulate subversive imagination and effort is an integral part of ¹⁴⁴the given society. Those whose life is ¹⁴⁵the hell of ¹⁴⁶the Affluent Society are kept in line by a brutality which revives medieval and early modern practices. For ¹⁴⁷the other, less underprivileged people, society takes care of ¹⁴⁸the need for liberation by satisfying ¹⁴⁹the needs which make servitude palatable and perhaps even unnoticeable, and it accomplishes this fact in ¹⁵⁰the process of production itself. Under its impact, ¹⁵¹the laboring classes in ¹⁵²the advanced areas of industrial civilization are undergoing a decisive transformation, which has become ¹⁵³the subject of a vast sociological research. I shall enumerate ¹⁵⁴the main factors of this transformation:

(1) Mechanization is increasingly reducing ¹⁵⁵the quantity and intensity of physical energy expended in labor. This evolution is of great bearing on ¹⁵⁶the Marxian concept of ¹⁵⁷the worker (proletarian). To Marx, ¹⁵⁸the proletarian is primarily ¹⁵⁹the manual laborer who expends and exhausts his physical energy in ¹⁶⁰the work process, even if he works with machines. ¹⁶¹the purchase and use of this physical energy, under subhuman conditions, for ¹⁶²the private

appropriation of surplus-value entailed ¹⁶³the revolting inhuman aspects of exploitation; ¹⁶⁴the Mandan notion denounces ¹⁶⁵the physical pain and ¹⁶⁶misery of labor. This is ¹⁶⁷the material, tangible element in wage slavery and alienation—¹⁶⁸the physiological and biological dimension of classical capitalism.

"Pendant les siècles passés, une cause importante d'aliénation résidait dans le fait que l'être humain prêtait son individualité biologique à l'organisation technique: il était porteur d'outils; les ensembles techniques ne pouvaient se constituer qu'en incorporant l'homme comme porteur d'outils. Le caractère déformant de la profession était à la fois psychique et somatique." 3

Now ¹⁶⁹the ever-more-complete mechanization of labor in advanced capitalism, while sustaining exploitation, modifies ¹⁷⁰the attitude and ¹⁷¹the status of ¹⁷²the exploited. Within ¹⁷³the technological ensemble, mechanized work in which automatic and semiautomatic

reactions fill ¹⁷⁴the larger part (if not ¹⁷⁵the whole) of labor time remains, as a life-long occupation, exhausting, stupefying, inhuman slavery—even more exhausting because of increased speed-up, control of ¹⁷⁶the machine operators (rather than of ¹⁷⁷the product), and isolation of ¹⁷⁸the workers from each other.' To be sure, this form of drudgery is expressive of arrested, partial automation, of ¹⁷⁹the coexistence of automated, semi-automated, and non-automated sections within ¹⁸⁰the same plant, but even under

these conditions, "for muscular fatigue technology has substituted tension and/or mental effort." For ¹⁸¹the more advanced automated plants, ¹⁸²the transformation of physical energy into technical and mental skills is emphasized.

1 ' . . skills of ¹⁸³the head rather than of ¹⁸⁴the hand, of ¹⁸⁵the logician rather than ¹⁸⁶the craftsman; of nerve rather than muscle; of ¹⁸⁷the pilot rather than ¹⁸⁸the manual worker; of ¹⁸⁹the maintenance man rather than ¹⁹⁰the operator."

This kind of masterly enslavement is not essentially different from that of ¹⁹¹the typist, ¹⁹²the bank teller, ¹⁹³the high-pressure salesman or saleswoman, and ¹⁹⁴the television announcer. Standardization and ¹⁹⁵the routine assimilate productive and non-productive jobs. ¹⁹⁶the proletarian of ¹⁹⁷the previous stages of capitalism was indeed ¹⁹⁸the beast of burden, by ¹⁹⁹the labor of his body procuring ²⁰⁰the necessities and luxuries of life while living in filth and poverty.

Thus he was ²⁰¹the living denial of his society.' In contrast, ²⁰²the organized worker in ²⁰³the advanced areas of ²⁰⁴the technological society lives this denial less conspicuously and, like ²⁰⁵the other human objects of ²⁰⁶the social division of labor, he is being incorporated into ²⁰⁷the technological community of ²⁰⁸the administered population. Moreover, in ²⁰⁹the most successful areas of automation, some sort of technological community seems to

integrate ²¹⁰the human atoms at work. ²¹¹the machine seems to instill some drugging rhythm in ²¹²the operators:

H. Marcuse text (Albanian version) – definite occurrences

Marcuse Herbert (2006) Njeriu Njëdimensional

2. ⁰⁰¹Bllokimi i ⁰⁰²Universit Politik

⁰⁰³Shoqëria e ⁰⁰⁴mobilizimit total, e cila po merr formë në ⁰⁰⁵rajonet më të përparuara të ⁰⁰⁶qytetërimit industrial, ndërthur në unitet produktiv ⁰⁰⁷tiparet e ⁰⁰⁸Shtetit të ⁰⁰⁹Mirëqenies Sociale dhe të ⁰¹⁰Shtetit të ⁰¹¹Luftës. E krahasuar me ⁰¹²paraardhëset e saj, është ajo vërtet një "shoqëri e re". ⁰¹³Vatrat e ⁰¹⁴shqetësimeve tradicionale po spastrohen ose po izoloohen, ⁰¹⁵elementët shpërbërës po vihen nën kontroll. ⁰¹⁶Prirjet kryesore janë të njohura : ⁰¹⁷përqendrimi i ⁰¹⁸ekonomisë kombëtare sipas ⁰¹⁹nevojave të ⁰²⁰orporatave të mëdha, me ⁰²¹qeverinë si forcë nxitëse, mbështetëse dhe ndonjëherë bile si forcë kontrolluese; ⁰²²mbrehja e kësaj ekonomie tek një sistem i përbotshëm i

aleancave ushtarake, tek ⁰²³marrëveshjet monetare, tek ⁰²⁴asistenca teknike dhe ⁰²⁵skemat e ⁰²⁶zhvillimit; ⁰²⁷përngjashmimi shkallë-shkallë i ⁰²⁸klasës punëtore me ⁰²⁹nëpunësit, i tipave udhëheqës në ⁰³⁰organizatat e ⁰³¹sipërmarrësve dhe në ⁰³²organizatat e ⁰³³punëtorëve, i ⁰³⁴aktiviteteve në ⁰³⁵kohën e lirë dhe i ⁰³⁶aspiratave në klasa të ndryshme sociale; ⁰³⁷nxitja e një harmonie të paracaktuar midis ⁰³⁸shkencës dhe ⁰³⁹qëllimeve kombëtare; ⁰⁴⁰pushtimi i ⁰⁴¹sferës private prej ⁰⁴²solidaritetit të ⁰⁴³mendimit publik; ⁰⁴⁴hapja e ⁰⁴⁵dhomës së ⁰⁴⁶gjumit për ⁰⁴⁷mediat e ⁰⁴⁸komunikimit masiv. Në ⁰⁴⁹sferën politike kjo prirje manifestohet në një unifikim të spikatur apo konvergjencë të ⁰⁵⁰të kundërtave. ⁰⁵¹Sistemi bipartizan nëpërkëmb në ⁰⁵²politikën e jashtme, nën ⁰⁵³kërcënimin e ⁰⁵⁴komunizmit ndërkombëtar, ⁰⁵⁵interesat e ⁰⁵⁶grupeve konkurruese dhe po përhapet në ⁰⁵⁷politikën e brendshme, ku ⁰⁵⁸programet e ⁰⁵⁹partive të mëdha po bëhen gjithnjë e më të padallueshme, madje dhe në ⁰⁶⁰shkallën e ⁰⁶¹hipokrizisë dhe në ⁰⁶²kundërmimin e ⁰⁶³klisheve. Ky unifikim i të ⁰⁶⁴kundërtave rëndon pikërisht mbi ⁰⁶⁵mundësitë e ⁰⁶⁶shndërrimit shoqëror atje, ku ⁰⁶⁷unifikimi përfshin ato shtresa në ⁰⁶⁸kurrizin e të cilave përparon ⁰⁶⁹sistemi - d.m.th. pikërisht ⁰⁷⁰klasat, ⁰⁷¹ekzistenca e të cilave mishëronte dikur ⁰⁷²opozitën ndaj ⁰⁷³sistemit si një i tërë.

Në ⁰⁷⁴Shtetet e Bashkuara vërehen marrëveshje të fshehta dhe aleanca midis ⁰⁷⁵botës së ⁰⁷⁶biznesit dhe ⁰⁷⁷punëtorisë së organizuar; në *Labor Looks at Labor : A Conversation*, botuar nga Center for the Study of Democratic Institutions në 1963, na thuhet se :

“Ajo që ka ndodhur është se ⁰⁷⁸sindikata në vetë ⁰⁷⁹sytë e saj është bërë pothuajse e padallueshme nga ⁰⁸⁰korporata. Ne shohim sot ⁰⁸¹fenomenin që ⁰⁸²sindikatat dhe ⁰⁸³korporatat llojnë së bashku. ⁰⁸⁴Sindikata nuk do të jetë në gjendje që t’i bindë ⁰⁸⁵punëtorët e ⁰⁸⁶prodhimit të ⁰⁸⁷raketave se ⁰⁸⁸kompania për të cilën ata punojnë është ⁰⁸⁹kundërshtarja e tyre, kur që të dyja si ⁰⁹⁰sindikata dhe ⁰⁹¹korporata po llojnë për kontrata më të mëdha në ⁰⁹²prodhimin e ⁰⁹³raketave dhe përpiqen që të fusin në ⁰⁹⁴këtë fushë edhe degë të tjera të ⁰⁹⁵industrisë së ⁰⁹⁶mbrojtjes, ose kur ato shfaqen bashkë para ⁰⁹⁷Kongresit dhe së bashku kërkohet se në vend të ⁰⁹⁸aeroplanëve bombardues duhen ndërtuar raketa apo bomba në vend të ⁰⁹⁹raketave, në varësi të ¹⁰⁰ontratës që marrin”.

¹⁰¹Partia Laburiste britanike, ¹⁰²udhëheqësit e së cilës garojnë me ¹⁰³palën tjetër konservative në ¹⁰⁴nxitjen e ¹⁰⁵interesave kombëtare, e ka të vështirë që të shpëtojë madje dhe një program modest të ¹⁰⁶shtetëzimit të pjesshëm. Në ¹⁰⁷Gjermaninë Perëndimore, e cila e ka nxjerrë jashtë ¹⁰⁸ligjit ¹⁰⁹Partinë Komuniste, ¹¹⁰Partia Socialdemokrate, pasi ka hedhur poshtë zyrtarisht ¹¹¹programet e saj marksiste, po dëshmon në mënyrë bindëse ¹¹²nderueshmërinë e saj. Kjo është ¹¹³situata në ¹¹⁴vendet udhëheqëse industriale të ¹¹⁵Perëndimit. Në Lindje, ¹¹⁶pakësimi gradual i ¹¹⁷kontrolleve direkte politike dëshmon ¹¹⁸besimin në rritje në ¹¹⁹efektshmërinë e ¹²⁰kontrolleve teknologjike si instrumente të ¹²¹sundimit. Për sa u përket ¹²²Partive të fuqishme Komuniste në Francë dhe në Itali, ato vërtetojnë ¹²³prirjen e përgjithshme të ¹²⁴situatës duke përkrahur një program minimal, i cili mbyll në sirtar ¹²⁵marrjen me revolucion të ¹²⁶pushtetit dhe kënaqen me ¹²⁷rregullat e ¹²⁸lojës parlamentare.

Megjithatë ndërsa është jokorrekte që t’i quajmë “të huaja” ¹²⁹partitë Franceze dhe Italiane, në ¹³⁰sensin që ato mbështeten nga një fuqi e huaj, ka në këtë

propagandë një bërthamë të paqëllimshme të së ¹³¹vërtetës : ato janë të huaja për aq sa janë ato dëshmitare të një historie të kaluar (apo të ardhme ?) në ¹³²realitetin e tashëm. Në qoftë se ato kanë pranuar që të punojnë brenda ¹³³kornizës së ¹³⁴sistemit ekzistues, kjo nuk është thjesht për arsye taktike dhe as në ¹³⁵sensin e një strategjie afatshkurtër, por sepse ¹³⁶baza e tyre shoqërore është dobësuar dhe ¹³⁷objektivat e tyre u ndryshuan për shkak të ¹³⁸transformimit të ¹³⁹sistemit kapitalist (sikurse ¹⁴⁰objektivat e ¹⁴¹Bashkimit Sovjetik, i cili e ka mbështetur këtë ndryshim në politikë). Këto parti kombëtare Komuniste luajnë ¹⁴²rolin historik të ¹⁴³partive legale të ¹⁴⁴opozitës “të dënuara” për të qenë joradikale. Ato dëshmojnë për ¹⁴⁵thellësinë dhe ¹⁴⁶rrezën e ¹⁴⁷integritimit kapitalist dhe për ¹⁴⁸kushtet, të cilat ¹⁴⁹diferencën cilësore *midis* ¹⁵⁰interesave në konflikt e bëjnë që të shfaqet si diferencë sasiore brenda ¹⁵¹shoqërisë së konsoliduar.

Nuk duket e nevojshme asnjë analizë e thellë për të gjetur ¹⁵²arsyet e këtyre ¹⁵³zhvillimeve. Për sa i përket ¹⁵⁴Perëndimit : ¹⁵⁵konfliktet e mëparshme brenda ¹⁵⁶shoqërisë modifikohen dhe arbitrohen nën ¹⁵⁷ndikimin e dyfishtë (dhe të ndërsjellë) të ¹⁵⁸progresit teknik dhe të ¹⁵⁹komunizmit ndërkombëtar. ¹⁶⁰Luftërat e ¹⁶¹klasave dobësohen dhe ¹⁶²“kontradiktat imperialiste” mbeten pezull përballë ¹⁶³kërcënimit nga jashtë. E mobilizuar kundër këtij ¹⁶⁴kërcënimi, ¹⁶⁵shoqëria kapitaliste tregon një unitet të brendshëm dhe kohezion të panjohur në ¹⁶⁶periudhat e mëparshme të ¹⁶⁷qytetërimit industrial. Ky është një kohezion mbi themele shumë materiale; ¹⁶⁸mobilizimi kundër ¹⁶⁹armikut vepron si një stimul i fuqishëm në favor të ¹⁷⁰prodhimit dhe të ¹⁷¹punësimit duke mbështetur kështu ¹⁷²standardin e lartë të ¹⁷³jetesës. Mbi këto themele ngrihet një univers administrues, ku ¹⁷⁴depresionet ekonomike kontrollohen dhe ¹⁷⁵konfliktet stabilizohen nëpërmjet ¹⁷⁶efekteve mirëbërëse të ¹⁷⁷produktivitetit në rritje dhe të ¹⁷⁸kërcënimit nga ¹⁷⁹lufta bërthamore. Është ky stabilizim “i përkohshëm” në ¹⁸⁰sensin që ai nuk pret ¹⁸¹rrënjët e ¹⁸²konflikteve, që ¹⁸³Marks i zbuloi në ¹⁸⁴mënyrën kapitaliste të ¹⁸⁵prodhimit (kontradikta midis ¹⁸⁶pronësisë private mbi ¹⁸⁷mjetet e ¹⁸⁸prodhimit dhe ¹⁸⁹produktivitetit shoqëror) apo është ai një transformim i vetë ¹⁹⁰strukturës antagonistë, e cila i zgjidh ¹⁹¹kontradiktat duke i bërë ato të pranueshme? Dhe në qoftë se është e vërtetë ¹⁹²alternativa e dytë, si e ndryshon ajo ¹⁹³raportin midis ¹⁹⁴kapitalizmit dhe ¹⁹⁵socializmit, i cili e bëri këtë të ¹⁹⁶fundit të shfaqej si ¹⁹⁷mohimi historik ¹⁹⁸i të parit ?

¹⁹⁹Ndrydhja e ²⁰⁰hndërrimit shoqëror
²⁰¹Teoria klasike Marksiste e parashihet ²⁰²kalimin nga ²⁰³kapitalizmi në socializëm si një revolucion politik: ²⁰⁴proletariati shkatërron ²⁰⁵aparatin politik të ²⁰⁶kapitalizmit, por e ruan ²⁰⁷aparatin teknologjik dhe e shoqëron atë. Ka një vazhdimësi në revolucion : ²⁰⁸racionalizmi teknologjik, i çliruar nga ²⁰⁹kufizimet irracionale dhe ²¹⁰shkatërrimet, ruhet dhe përsoset në ²¹¹shoqërinë e re. Është interesante të lexojmë një shprehje Marksiste Sovjetike për këtë vazhdimësi, e cila është me rëndësi kaq jetike për ²¹²nocionin e ²¹³socializmit si mohim i përcaktuar i ²¹⁴kapitalizmit :
“(1) Megjithëse ²¹⁵zhvillimi i ²¹⁶teknologjisë iu nënshtrohet ²¹⁷ligjeve ekonomike të çdo ²¹⁸formacioni shoqëror, ai nuk mbaron, si ²¹⁹faktorët e tjerë ekonomikë, me ²²⁰pushimin e ²²¹veprimit të ²²²ligjeve të ²²³formacionit. Kur në ²²⁴procesin e ²²⁵revolucionit shpërthehen ²²⁶marrëdhëniet e vjetra në prodhim, ²²⁷teknologjia mbetet dhe, e varur nga ²²⁸ligjet ekonomike të

²²⁹formacionit të ri ekonomik, vazhdon të zhvillohet më tej, me shpejtësi të rritur. (2) Në kontrast me ²³⁰zhvillimin e ²³¹bazës ekonomike në ²³²shoqëritë antagonistë, ²³³teknologjia nuk zhvillohet me kërcime, por me një akumulim gradual të ²³⁴elementeve të një cilësie të re, ndërsa ²³⁵elementet e ²³⁶cilësisë së vjetër zhduken. (3) [e parëndësishme për ²³⁷kontekstin tonë]”.

Në ²³⁸kapitalizmin e përparuar, ²³⁹racionalizmi teknik, megjithë ²⁴⁰përdorimin e tij irracional mishërohet në ²⁴¹aparatin prodhues. Kjo gjë vlen jo vetëm për ²⁴²uzinat e mekanizuara, ²⁴³veçat e punës dhe shfrytëzimin e burimeve, por edhe për ²⁴⁴mënyrën e ²⁴⁵punës si përshtatje ndaj ²⁴⁶procesit të ²⁴⁷prodhimit me makina dhe ndaj ²⁴⁸drejtimit të tij, sikurse kullandrisen këto nëpërmjet ²⁴⁹“menaxhimit shkencor”. As ²⁵⁰shtetëzimi dhe as ²⁵¹shoqërizimi nuk e ndryshojnë nga ²⁵²vetvetja këtë mishërim fizik të ²⁵³racionalizmit teknologjik; përkundrazi ²⁵⁴ky i fundit mbetet një kusht paraprak për ²⁵⁵zhvillimin socialist të të gjitha ²⁵⁶forcave prodhuese.

Sigurisht, ²⁵⁷Marks i ishte i ²⁵⁸pikëpamjes se ²⁵⁹organizimi dhe ²⁶⁰drejtimi i ²⁶¹aparatis prodhues nga ²⁶²“prodhuesit e drejtpërdrejtë” do të sillte një ndryshim *cilësor* në ²⁶³vazhdimësinë teknike : pra ²⁶⁴prodhimin për ²⁶⁵përmbushjen e ²⁶⁶nevojave individuale që zhvillohen lirisht. Megjithatë në ²⁶⁷shkallën që ²⁶⁸aparati ekzistues teknik gllabëron ²⁶⁹ekzistencën publike dhe private në të gjitha ²⁷⁰sferat e ²⁷¹shoqërisë - kjo do të thotë që bëhet mjet i ²⁷²kontrollit dhe i ²⁷³kohezionit në një univers politik, i cili i përland ²⁷⁴klasat punonjëse - po në atë shkallë ²⁷⁵ndryshimi cilësor do të sillte me vete një ndryshim në *vetë* ²⁷⁶strukturën teknologjike. Dhe një ndryshim i tillë do të *presupozonte* që ²⁷⁷klasat punonjëse pikërisht në ²⁷⁸ekzistencën e tyre janë të ftohura prej këtij ²⁷⁹universi, që ²⁸⁰vetëdija e tyre është ajo e një pamundësie totale për të vazhduar që të ekzistojnë në këtë univers, kështu që ²⁸¹nevoja për ndryshim cilësor është një çështje për jetë a vdekje. Kështu ²⁸²mohimi ekziston *para* vetë ²⁸³ndryshimit; ²⁸⁴nocioni se ²⁸⁵forcat çliruese historike zhvillohen *brenda* ²⁸⁶shoqërisë ekzistuese është një nga ²⁸⁷gurët e ²⁸⁸themelit në ²⁸⁹teorinë Marksiste.

Tani është pikërisht kjo vetëdije e re, kjo “hapësirë e brendshme”, ²⁹⁰hapësira për ²⁹¹praktikën historike transhendentale, e cila është duke u bllokuar nga një shoqëri, ku ²⁹²subjektet si dhe ²⁹³objektet janë mjete në një të tërë, e cila e ka *raison d'être* të saj në ²⁹⁴arritjet e ²⁹⁵produktivitetit të saj shumë të fortë. ²⁹⁶Premtimi i saj më i lartë është një jetë akoma më e rehatshme për një numër gjithnjë e më të madh të ²⁹⁷njerëzve, të cilët në një sens strikt nuk mund të përfytyrojnë dot një univers cilësisht të ndryshëm të ²⁹⁸ligjërimiave dhe ²⁹⁹veprimeve, sepse ³⁰⁰aftësia për t'i ndrydhur dhe manipuluar ³⁰¹përfytyrimet dhe ³⁰²përpjekjet subversive është një pjesë përbërëse e ³⁰³shoqërisë së dhënë. Ata, që jetojnë në ³⁰⁴skëterrën e ³⁰⁵Shoqërisë së ³⁰⁶Bollëkut mbahen në rresht me anë të një brutaliteti që ringjall ³⁰⁷praktikat mesjetare dhe ato të ³⁰⁸kohës së hershme të re. Për të tjerët, ³⁰⁹njerëzit më pak të shpërfillur, ³¹⁰shoqëria kujdeset për ³¹¹nevojën për çlirim duke plotësuar ³¹²nevojat, të cilat e bëjnë ³¹³skllavërinë të hijshme dhe ndoshta madje të padukshme dhe ajo e realizon këtë fakt në vetë ³¹⁴procesin e ³¹⁵prodhimit. Nën ³¹⁶ndikimin e tij, ³¹⁷klasat punonjëse në ³¹⁸rajonet e përparuara të ³¹⁹qytetërimit industrial po pësojnë një transformim vendimtar, i cili është bërë temë e një kërkimi të gjerë sociologjik. Unë do të numëroj ³²⁰faktorët kryesorë të këtij ³²¹transformimi :

(1) ³²²Mekanizimi po pakëson gjithnjë e më tepër ³²³sasinë dhe ³²⁴intensitetin e ³²⁵energjisë fizike të harxhuar në punë. Ky zhvillim është me rëndësi të

madhe për ³²⁶konceptin Marksist të ³²⁷punëtorit (proletarit). Për ³²⁸Marksin, ³²⁹proletari është së pari punëtor krahu, i cili e harxhon dhe e shteron ³³⁰energjinë e tij fizike në ³³¹procesin e ³³²punës, edhe nëse ai punon me makina.

³³³Blerja dhe ³³⁴përdorimi i kësaj energjie fizike, në kushte jonjerëzore, për ³³⁵përvetësimin privat të mbivlerës solli me vete ³³⁶aspektet revoltuese çnjerëzore të ³³⁷shfrytëzimit; ³³⁸nocioni Marksist denoncon ³³⁹vuajtjen fizike dhe ³⁴⁰mjerimin në punë. Ky është ³⁴¹elementi material, i prekshëm i ³⁴²skllavërisë së ³⁴³pagës me mëditje dhe i ³⁴⁴tëhuajtjes - ³⁴⁵dimensioni fiziologjik dhe biologjik i ³⁴⁶kapitalizmit klasik.

“Pendant les siècles passés, une cause importante d’aliénation résidait dans le fait que l’être humain prêtait son individualité biologique à l’organisation technique : il était porteur d’outils; les ensembles techniques ne pouvaient se constituer qu’en incorporant l’homme comme porteur d’outils. Le caractère déformant de la profession était à la fois psychique et somatique”⁹.

9 “

Tani ³⁴⁷mekanizimi gjithnjë e më i plotë i ³⁴⁸punës në ³⁴⁹kapitalizmin e përparuar, ndërsa mbështet ³⁵⁰shfrytëzimin, modifikon ³⁵¹qëndrimin dhe ³⁵²statusin e të ³⁵³shfrytëzuarve. ³⁵⁴Brenda ansamblit teknologjik, ³⁵⁵puna e mekanizuar, në të cilën ³⁵⁶reagimet automatike dhe gjysmëautomatike zënë ³⁵⁷pjesën më të madhe të ³⁵⁸kohës së ³⁵⁹punës (nëse jo ³⁶⁰të gjithën), mbetet, si një veprimtari e përjetshme, një skllavëri rraskapitëse, topitëse, jonjerëzore - e cila është madje akoma më rraskapitëse për shkak të ³⁶¹përshpejtimit të lartë, ³⁶²kontrollit të ³⁶³punëtorëve të ³⁶⁴makinave (më shumë sesa të ³⁶⁵produktit) dhe ³⁶⁶izolimit të ³⁶⁷punëtorëve nga njëri tjetri 10. Sigurisht kjo formë e ³⁶⁸rropatjes shpreh ³⁶⁹automatizimin e *frenuar, të pjesshëm*, shpreh ³⁷⁰bashkekzistencën e ³⁷¹reparteve të automatizuara, gjysmë të automatizuara dhe jo të automatizuara brenda ³⁷²të njëjtës uzinë, por madje edhe në këto kushte ³⁷³“teknologjia e ka zëvendësuar ³⁷⁴lodhjen muskulare me ³⁷⁵tendosjen e ³⁷⁶nervave dhe /apo me sforcime mendore” 11. Për sa u përket ³⁷⁷uzinave më të përparuara të automatizuara, theksohet ³⁷⁸shndërrimi i ³⁷⁹energjisë fizike në zotësi teknike dhe intelektuale :

“... më shumë ³⁸⁰zotësitë e ³⁸¹kokës sesa të ³⁸²dorës, e ³⁸³logjicienit sesa ³⁸⁴të zejtarit, e ³⁸⁵nervave sesa të ³⁸⁶muskujeve, e ³⁸⁷drejtuesit sesa të ³⁸⁸punëtorit të ³⁸⁹krahut, e ³⁹⁰mirëmbajtësit sesa të ³⁹¹përdoruesit” 12. Ky tip i ³⁹²skllavërimit mjesh tëror në thelb nuk është i ndryshëm nga ai i ³⁹³daktilografistes, i ³⁹⁴arkëtarit të ³⁹⁵bankës, i ³⁹⁶shitësit apo ³⁹⁷shitëses që punon nën tryzni të lartë dhe i ³⁹⁸folësit në televizion. ³⁹⁹Standardizimi dhe ⁴⁰⁰rutina përngjashmojnë njëra me tjetrën ⁴⁰¹punët produktive me ato joproduktive. ⁴⁰²Proletari i ⁴⁰³stadeve të mëparshme të ⁴⁰⁴kapitalizmit ishte vërtet kafshë barre, duke garantuar nëpërmjet ⁴⁰⁵punës së ⁴⁰⁶trupit të tij ⁴⁰⁷nevojat dhe ⁴⁰⁸lukset e ⁴⁰⁹jetës, ndërsa vetë ai jetonte në pisllek dhe varfëri. Ai ishte kështu ⁴¹⁰mohimi i gjallë i ⁴¹¹shoqërisë së tij 13. Në kontrast me të, ⁴¹²punëtori i organizuar në ⁴¹³rajonet e përparuara të ⁴¹⁴shoqërisë teknologjike e mishëron më pak të qartë këtë mohim dhe sikurse ⁴¹⁵objektet e tjera humane të ⁴¹⁶ndarjes shoqërore të ⁴¹⁷punës, është duke u përfshirë ai në ⁴¹⁸komunitetin teknologjik të ⁴¹⁹popullsisë së administruar. Për më tepër, në ⁴²⁰fushat më të suksesshme të ⁴²¹automatizimit, duket se ndonjë lloj ⁴²²komuniteti teknologjik i integron ⁴²³atomet njerëzore gjatë ⁴²⁴punës.

Duket se ⁴²⁵makina ngulit një ritëm dehës tek ⁴²⁶operatorët e saj :
“Pranohet në përgjithësi nga të gjithë se ⁴²⁷lëvizjet e ndërvarura të kryera nga një grup personash, të cilët ndjekin një skemë ritmike, shkaktojnë kënaqësi - pa marrë fare parasysh se çfarë po realizohet nga ⁴²⁸lëvizjet”¹⁴.

J.K. Rowling text (English version) – definite occurrences

Rowling J.K. (1998) Harry Potter and the Philosopher’s Stone

⁰⁰¹THE BOY WHO LIVED

Mr. and Mrs. Dursley, of number four, Privet Drive, were proud to say that they were perfectly normal, thank you very much. They were ⁰⁰²the last people you’d expect to be involved in anything strange or mysterious, because they just didn’t hold with such nonsense.

Mr. Dursley was ⁰⁰³the director of a firm called Grunnings, which made drills. He was a big, beefy man with hardly any neck, although he did have a very large mustache. Mrs. Dursley was thin and blonde and had nearly twice ⁰⁰⁴the usual amount of neck, which came in very useful as she spent so much of her time craning over garden fences, spying on ⁰⁰⁵the neighbors. The Dursleys had a small son called Dudley and in their opinion there was no finer boy anywhere. The Dursleys had everything they wanted, but they also had a secret, and their greatest fear was that somebody would discover it. They didn’t think they could bear it if anyone found out about ⁰⁰⁶the Potters. Mrs. Potter was Mrs. Dursley’s sister, but they hadn’t met for several years; in fact, Mrs. Dursley pretended she didn’t have a sister, because her sister and her good-for-nothing husband were as unDursleyish as it was possible to be. The Dursleys shuddered to think what ⁰⁰⁷the neighbors would say if the Potters arrived in ⁰⁰⁸the street. The Dursleys knew that the Potters had a small son, too, but they had never even seen him. This boy was another good reason for keeping the Potters away; they didn’t want Dudley mixing with a child like that.

When Mr. and Mrs. Dursley woke up on ⁰⁰⁹the dull, gray Tuesday our story starts, there was nothing about ⁰¹⁰the cloudy sky outside to suggest that strange and mysterious things would soon be happening all over ⁰¹¹the country. Mr. Dursley hummed as he picked out his most boring tie for work, and Mrs. Dursley gossiped away happily as she wrestled a screaming Dudley into his high chair.

None of them noticed a large, tawny owl flutter past ⁰¹²the window.

At half past eight, Mr. Dursley picked up his briefcase, pecked Mrs. Dursley on ⁰¹³the cheek, and tried to kiss Dudley good-bye but missed, because Dudley was now having a tantrum and throwing his cereal at ⁰¹⁴the walls. “Little tyke,” chortled Mr. Dursley as he left ⁰¹⁵the house. He got into his car and backed out of number four’s drive.

It was on ⁰¹⁶the corner of ⁰¹⁷the street that he noticed ⁰¹⁸the first sign of something peculiar — a cat reading a map. For a second, Mr. Dursley didn't realize what he had seen — then he jerked his head around to look again. There was a tabby cat standing on ⁰¹⁹the corner of Privet Drive, but there wasn't a map in sight. What could he have been thinking of? It must have been a trick of ⁰²⁰the light. Mr. Dursley blinked and stared at ⁰²¹the cat. It stared back. As Mr. Dursley drove around ⁰²²the corner and up ⁰²³the road, he watched ⁰²⁴the cat in his mirror. It was now reading ⁰²⁵the sign that said Privet Drive — no, *looking* at ⁰²⁶the sign; cats couldn't read maps *or* signs. Mr. Dursley gave himself a little shake and put ⁰²⁷the cat out of his mind. As he drove toward town he thought of nothing except a large order of drills he was hoping to get that day.

But on ⁰²⁸the edge of town, drills were driven out of his mind by something else. As he sat in ⁰²⁹the usual morning traffic jam, he couldn't help noticing that there seemed to be a lot of strangely dressed people about. People in cloaks. Mr. Dursley couldn't bear people who dressed in funny clothes — ⁰³⁰the getups you saw on young people! He supposed this was some stupid new fashion. He drummed his fingers on ⁰³¹the steering wheel and his eyes fell on a huddle of these weirdos standing quite close by. They were whispering excitedly together. Mr. Dursley was enraged to see that a couple of them weren't young at all; why, that man had to be older than he was, and wearing an emerald-green cloak! ⁰³²The nerve of him! But then it struck Mr. Dursley that this was probably some silly stunt — these people were obviously collecting for something . . . yes, that would be it. ⁰³³The traffic moved on and a few minutes later, Mr. Dursley arrived in ⁰³⁴the Grunnings parking lot, his mind back on drills.

Mr. Dursley always sat with his back to ⁰³⁵the window in his office on ⁰³⁶the ninth floor. If he hadn't, he might have found it harder to concentrate on drills that morning. He didn't see ⁰³⁷the owls swooping past in broad daylight, though people down in ⁰³⁸the street did; they pointed and gazed open-mouthed as owl after owl sped overhead. Most of them had never seen an owl even at nighttime. Mr.

Dursley, however, had a perfectly normal, owl-free morning. He yelled at five different people. He made several important telephone calls and shouted a bit more. He was in a very good mood until lunchtime, when he thought he'd stretch his legs and walk across ⁰³⁹the road to buy himself a bun from ⁰⁴⁰the bakery.

He'd forgotten all about ⁰⁴¹the people in cloaks until he passed a group of them next to ⁰⁴²the baker's. He eyed them angrily as he passed. He didn't know why, but they made him uneasy. This bunch were whispering excitedly, too, and he couldn't see a single collecting tin. It was on his way back past them, clutching a large doughnut in a bag, that he caught a few words of what they were saying.

“The Potters, that's right, that's what I heard —”

“— yes, their son, Harry —”

Mr. Dursley stopped dead. Fear flooded him. He looked back at

⁰⁴³the whisperers as if he wanted to say something to them, but thought better of it.

He dashed back across ⁰⁴⁴the road, hurried up to his office, snapped at his secretary not to disturb him, seized his telephone, and had almost finished dialing his home number when he changed his mind. He put ⁰⁴⁵the receiver back down and stroked his mustache, thinking . . . no, he was being stupid. Potter wasn't such an unusual name. He was sure there were lots of people called Potter who had a son called Harry. Come to think of it, he wasn't even sure his nephew *was* called Harry. He'd never even seen ⁰⁴⁶the boy. It might have been Harvey. Or Harold. There was no point in worrying Mrs. Dursley; she always got so upset at any mention of her sister. He didn't blame her — if *he'd* had a sister like that . . . but all the same, those people in cloaks . . .

He found it a lot harder to concentrate on drills that afternoon and when he left ⁰⁴⁷the building at five o'clock, he was still so worried that he walked straight into someone just outside ⁰⁴⁸the door.

"Sorry," he grunted, as ⁰⁴⁹the tiny old man stumbled and almost fell. It was a few seconds before Mr. Dursley realized that ⁰⁵⁰the man was wearing a violet cloak. He didn't seem at all upset at being almost knocked to ⁰⁵¹the ground. On ⁰⁵²the contrary, his face split into a wide smile and he said in a squeaky voice that made passersby stare, "Don't be sorry, my dear sir, for nothing could upset me today! Rejoice, for You-Know-Who has gone at last! Even Muggles like yourself should be celebrating, this happy, happy day!"

And ⁰⁵³the old man hugged Mr. Dursley around ⁰⁵⁴the middle and walked off.

Mr. Dursley stood rooted to ⁰⁵⁵the spot. He had been hugged by a complete stranger. He also thought he had been called a Muggle, whatever that was. He was rattled. He hurried to his car and set off for home, hoping he was imagining things, which he had never hoped before, because he didn't approve of imagination.

As he pulled into ⁰⁵⁶the driveway of number four, ⁰⁵⁷the first thing he saw — and it didn't improve his mood — was ⁰⁵⁸the tabby cat he'd spotted that morning. It was now sitting on his garden wall. He was sure it was ⁰⁵⁹the same one; it had ⁰⁶⁰the same markings around its eyes.

"Shoo!" said Mr. Dursley loudly.

⁰⁶¹The cat didn't move. It just gave him a stern look. Was this normal cat behavior? Mr. Dursley wondered. Trying to pull himself together, he let himself into ⁰⁶²the house. He was still determined not to mention anything to his wife.

Mrs. Dursley had had a nice, normal day. She told him over dinner all about Mrs. Next Door's problems with her daughter and how Dudley had learned a new word ("Won't!"). Mr. Dursley tried to act normally. When Dudley had been put to bed, he went into ⁰⁶³the living room in time to catch ⁰⁶⁴the last report on ⁰⁶⁵the evening news: "And finally, bird-watchers everywhere have reported that ⁰⁶⁶the nation's owls have been behaving very unusually today. Although owls normally hunt at night and are hardly ever seen in daylight,

there have been hundreds of sightings of these birds flying in every direction since sunrise. Experts are unable to explain why⁰⁶⁷ the owls have suddenly changed their sleeping pattern.”⁰⁶⁸ The newscaster allowed himself a grin. “Most mysterious. And now, over to Jim McGuffin with⁰⁶⁹ the weather. Going to be any more showers of owls tonight, Jim?”

“Well, Ted,” said⁰⁷⁰ the weatherman, “I don’t know about that, but it’s not only⁰⁷¹ the owls that have been acting oddly today. Viewers as far apart as Kent, Yorkshire, and Dundee have been phoning in to tell me that instead of⁰⁷² the rain I promised yesterday, they’ve had a downpour of shooting stars! Perhaps people have been celebrating Bonfire Night early — it’s not until next week, folks! But I can promise a wet night tonight.”

Mr. Dursley sat frozen in his armchair. Shooting stars all over Britain? Owls flying by daylight? Mysterious people in cloaks all over⁰⁷³ the place? And a whisper, a whisper about the Potters . . .

Mrs. Dursley came into⁰⁷⁴ the living room carrying two cups of tea. It was no good. He’d have to say something to her. He cleared his throat nervously. “Er — Petunia, dear — you haven’t heard from your sister lately, have you?”

As he had expected, Mrs. Dursley looked shocked and angry. After all, they normally pretended she didn’t have a sister.

“No,” she said sharply. “Why?”

“Funny stuff on⁰⁷⁵ the news,” Mr. Dursley mumbled. “Owls . . . shooting stars . . . and there were a lot of funny-looking people in town today . . .”

“So?” snapped Mrs. Dursley.

“Well, I just thought . . . maybe . . . it was something to do with . . . you know . . . *her* crowd.”

Mrs. Dursley sipped her tea through pursed lips. Mr. Dursley wondered whether he dared tell her he’d heard⁰⁷⁶ the name “Potter.”

He decided he didn’t dare. Instead he said, as casually as he could, “Their son — he’d be about Dudley’s age now, wouldn’t he?”

“I suppose so,” said Mrs. Dursley stiffly.

“What’s his name again? Howard, isn’t it?”

“Harry. Nasty, common name, if you ask me.”

“Oh, yes,” said Mr. Dursley, his heart sinking horribly. “Yes, I quite agree.”

He didn’t say another word on⁰⁷⁷ the subject as they went upstairs to bed. While Mrs. Dursley was in⁰⁷⁸ the bathroom, Mr. Dursley crept to⁰⁷⁹ the bedroom window and peered down into⁰⁸⁰ the front garden.

⁰⁸¹ The cat was still there. It was staring down Privet Drive as though it were waiting for something.

Was he imagining things? Could all this have anything to do with the Potters? If it did . . . if it got out that they were related to a pair of — well, he didn’t think he could bear it.

The Dursleys got into bed. Mrs. Dursley fell asleep quickly but Mr. Dursley lay awake, turning it all over in his mind. His last, comforting thought before he fell asleep was that even if the Potters *were* involved, there was no reason for them to come near him and

Mrs. Dursley. The Potters knew very well what he and Petunia thought about them and their kind. . . . He couldn't see how he and Petunia could get mixed up in anything that might be going on — he yawned and turned over — it couldn't affect *them*. . . . How very wrong he was.

Mr. Dursley might have been drifting into an uneasy sleep, but ⁰⁸²the cat on ⁰⁸³the wall outside was showing no sign of sleepiness. It was sitting as still as a statue, its eyes fixed unblinkingly on ⁰⁸⁴the far corner of Privet Drive. It didn't so much as quiver when a car door slammed on ⁰⁸⁵the next street, nor when two owls swooped overhead. In fact, it was nearly midnight before ⁰⁸⁶the cat moved at all. A man appeared on ⁰⁸⁷the corner ⁰⁸⁸the cat had been watching, appeared so suddenly and silently you'd have thought he'd just popped out of ⁰⁸⁹the ground. ⁰⁹⁰The cat's tail twitched and its eyes narrowed. Nothing like this man had ever been seen on Privet Drive. He was tall, thin, and very old, judging by ⁰⁹¹the silver of his hair and beard, which were both long enough to tuck into his belt. He was wearing long robes, a purple cloak that swept ⁰⁹²the ground, and high-heeled, buckled boots. His blue eyes were light, bright, and sparkling behind half-moon spectacles and his nose was very long and crooked, as though it had been broken at least twice. This man's name was Albus Dumbledore.

Albus Dumbledore didn't seem to realize that he had just arrived in a street where everything from his name to his boots was unwelcome. He was busy rummaging in his cloak, looking for something. But he did seem to realize he was being watched, because he looked up suddenly at ⁰⁹³the cat, which was still staring at him from ⁰⁹⁴the other end of ⁰⁹⁵the street. For some reason, ⁰⁹⁶the sight of ⁰⁹⁷the cat seemed to amuse him. He chuckled and muttered, "I should have known."

He found what he was looking for in his inside pocket. It seemed to be a silver cigarette lighter. He flicked it open, held it up in ⁰⁹⁸the air, and clicked it. ⁰⁹⁹The nearest street lamp went out with a little pop. He clicked it again — ¹⁰⁰the next lamp flickered into darkness. Twelve times he clicked ¹⁰¹the Put-Outer, until ¹⁰²the only lights left on ¹⁰³the whole street were two tiny pinpricks in ¹⁰⁴the distance, which were ¹⁰⁵the eyes of ¹⁰⁶the cat watching him. If anyone looked out of their window now, even beady-eyed Mrs. Dursley, they wouldn't be able to see anything that was happening down on ¹⁰⁷the pavement. Dumbledore slipped ¹⁰⁸the Put-Outer back inside his cloak and set off down ¹⁰⁹the street toward number four, where he sat down on ¹¹⁰the wall next to ¹¹¹the cat. He didn't look at it, but after a moment he spoke to it.

"Fancy seeing you here, Professor McGonagall."

He turned to smile at ¹¹²the tabby, but it had gone. Instead he was smiling at a rather severe-looking woman who was wearing square glasses exactly ¹¹³the shape of ¹¹⁴the markings ¹¹⁵the cat had had around its eyes. She, too, was wearing a cloak, an emerald one. Her black hair was drawn into a tight bun. She looked distinctly ruffled.

"How did you know it was me?" she asked.

“My dear Professor, I’ve never seen a cat sit so stiffly.”

“You’d be stiff if you’d been sitting on a brick wall all day,” said Professor McGonagall.

“All day? When you could have been celebrating? I must have passed a dozen feasts and parties on my way here.”

Professor McGonagall sniffed angrily.

“Oh yes, everyone’s celebrating, all right,” she said impatiently.

“You’d think they’d be a bit more careful, but no — even ¹¹⁶the Muggles have noticed something’s going on. It was on their news.” She jerked her head back at the Dursleys’ dark living-room window. “I heard it. Flocks of owls . . . shooting stars. . . . Well, they’re not completely stupid. They were bound to notice something. Shooting stars down in Kent — I’ll bet that was Dedalus Diggle. He never had much sense.”

“You can’t blame them,” said Dumbledore gently. “We’ve had precious little to celebrate for eleven years.”

“I know that,” said Professor McGonagall irritably. “But that’s no reason to lose our heads. People are being downright careless, out on ¹¹⁷the streets in broad daylight, not even dressed in Muggle clothes, swapping rumors.”

She threw a sharp, sideways glance at Dumbledore here, as though hoping he was going to tell her something, but he didn’t, so she went on. “A fine thing it would be if, on ¹¹⁸the very day You-Know-Who seems to have disappeared at last, ¹¹⁹the Muggles found out about us all. I suppose he really *has* gone, Dumbledore?”

“It certainly seems so,” said Dumbledore. “We have much to be thankful for. Would you care for a lemon drop?”

“A *what*?”

“A lemon drop. They’re a kind of Muggle sweet I’m rather fond of.”

“No, thank you,” said Professor McGonagall coldly, as though she didn’t think this was ¹²⁰the moment for lemon drops. “As I say, even if You-Know-Who *has* gone —”

“My dear Professor, surely a sensible person like yourself can call him by his name? All this ‘You-Know-Who’ nonsense — for eleven years I have been trying to persuade people to call him by his proper name: *Voldemort*.” Professor McGonagall flinched, but Dumbledore, who was unsticking two lemon drops, seemed not to notice.

“It all gets so confusing if we keep saying ‘You-Know-Who.’ I have never seen any reason to be frightened of saying Voldemort’s name.”

“I know you haven’t,” said Professor McGonagall, sounding half exasperated, half admiring. “But you’re different. Everyone knows you’re the only one You-Know- oh, all right, *Voldemort*, was frightened of.”

“You flatter me,” said Dumbledore calmly. “Voldemort had powers I will never have.”

“Only because you’re too — well — *noble* to use them.”

“It’s lucky it’s dark. I haven’t blushed so much since Madam Pomfrey told me she liked my new earmuffs.”

Professor McGonagall shot a sharp look at Dumbledore and said, “¹²¹The owls are nothing next to ¹²²the *rumors* that are flying around. You know what everyone’s saying? About why he’s disappeared? About what finally stopped him?”

It seemed that Professor McGonagall had reached ¹²³the point she was most anxious to discuss, ¹²⁴the real reason she had been waiting on a cold, hard wall all day, for neither as a cat nor as a woman had she fixed Dumbledore with such a piercing stare as she did now. It was plain that whatever “everyone” was saying, she was not going to believe it until Dumbledore told her it was true. Dumbledore, however, was choosing another lemon drop and did not answer.

“What they’re *saying*,” she pressed on, “is that last night Voldemort turned up in Godric’s Hollow. He went to find the Potters.

¹²⁵The rumor is that Lily and James Potter are — are — that they’re — *dead*.”

Dumbledore bowed his head. Professor McGonagall gasped.

“Lily and James . . . I can’t believe it . . . I didn’t want to believe it . . . Oh, Albus . . .”

Dumbledore reached out and patted her on ¹²⁶the shoulder. “I know . . . I know . . .” he said heavily.

Professor McGonagall’s voice trembled as she went on. “That’s not all. They’re saying he tried to kill the Potters’ son, Harry.

But — he couldn’t. He couldn’t kill that little boy. No one knows why, or how, but they’re saying that when he couldn’t kill Harry Potter, Voldemort’s power somehow broke — and that’s why he’s gone.”

Dumbledore nodded glumly.

“It’s — it’s *true*?” faltered Professor McGonagall. “After all he’s done . . . all ¹²⁷the people he’s killed . . . he couldn’t kill a little boy? It’s just astounding . . . of all ¹²⁸the things to stop him . . . but how in ¹²⁹the name of heaven did Harry survive?”

“We can only guess,” said Dumbledore. “We may never know.”

Professor McGonagall pulled out a lace handkerchief and dabbed at her eyes beneath her spectacles. Dumbledore gave a great sniff as he took a golden watch from his pocket and examined it. It was a very odd watch. It had twelve hands but no numbers; instead, little planets were moving around ¹³⁰the edge. It must have made sense to Dumbledore, though, because he put it back in his pocket and said, “Hagrid’s late. I suppose it was he who told you I’d be here, by ¹³¹the way?”

“Yes,” said Professor McGonagall. “And I don’t suppose you’re going to tell me *why* you’re here, of all places?”

“I’ve come to bring Harry to his aunt and uncle. They’re ¹³²the only family he has left now.”

“You don’t mean — you *can’t* mean ¹³³the people who live *here*?” cried Professor McGonagall, jumping to her feet and pointing at number four. “Dumbledore — you can’t. I’ve been watching them all day. You couldn’t find two people who are less like us. And they’ve got this son — I saw him kicking his mother all ¹³⁴the way up ¹³⁵the street, screaming for sweets. Harry Potter come and live here!”

“It’s ¹³⁶the best place for him,” said Dumbledore firmly. “His aunt and uncle will be able to explain everything to him when he’s older. I’ve written them a letter.”

“A letter?” repeated Professor McGonagall faintly, sitting back down on ¹³⁷the wall. “Really, Dumbledore, you think you can explain all this in a letter? These people will never understand him! He’ll be famous — a legend — I wouldn’t be surprised if today was known as Harry Potter Day in ¹³⁸the future — there will be books written about Harry — every child in our world will know his name!”

“Exactly,” said Dumbledore, looking very seriously over ¹³⁹the top of his half-moon glasses. “It would be enough to turn any boy’s head. Famous before he can walk and talk! Famous for something he won’t even remember! Can’t you see how much better off he’ll be, growing up away from all that until he’s ready to take it?”

Professor McGonagall opened her mouth, changed her mind, swallowed, and then said, “Yes — yes, you’re right, of course. But how is ¹⁴⁰the boy getting here, Dumbledore?” She eyed his cloak suddenly as though she thought he might be hiding Harry underneath it.

“Hagrid’s bringing him.”

“You think it — *wise* — to trust Hagrid with something as important as this?”

“I would trust Hagrid with my life,” said Dumbledore.

“I’m not saying his heart isn’t in ¹⁴¹the right place,” said Professor McGonagall grudgingly, “but you can’t pretend he’s not careless. He does tend to — what was that?”

A low rumbling sound had broken ¹⁴²the silence around them. It grew steadily louder as they looked up and down ¹⁴³the street for some sign of a headlight; it swelled to a roar as they both looked up at ¹⁴⁴the sky — and a huge motorcycle fell out of ¹⁴⁵the air and landed on ¹⁴⁶the road in front of them.

If ¹⁴⁷the motorcycle was huge, it was nothing to ¹⁴⁸the man sitting astride it. He was almost twice as tall as a normal man and at least five times as wide. He looked simply too big to be allowed, and so *wild* — long tangles of bushy black hair and beard hid most of his face, he had hands ¹⁴⁹the size of trash can lids, and his feet in their leather boots were like baby dolphins. In his vast, muscular arms he was holding a bundle of blankets.

“Hagrid,” said Dumbledore, sounding relieved. “At last. And where did you get that motorcycle?”

“Borrowed it, Professor Dumbledore, sir,” said ¹⁵⁰the giant, climbing carefully off ¹⁵¹the motorcycle as he spoke. “Young Sirius Black lent it to me. I’ve got him, sir.”

“No problems, were there?”

“No, sir — house was almost destroyed, but I got him out all right before ¹⁵²the Muggles started swarmin’ around. He fell asleep as we was flyin’ over Bristol.”

Dumbledore and Professor McGonagall bent forward over ¹⁵³the bundle of blankets. Inside, just visible, was a baby boy, fast asleep. Under a tuft of jet-black hair over his forehead they could see a curiously

shaped cut, like a bolt of lightning.

“Is that where — ?” whispered Professor McGonagall.

“Yes,” said Dumbledore. “He’ll have that scar forever.”

“Couldn’t you do something about it, Dumbledore?”

“Even if I could, I wouldn’t. Scars can come in handy. I have one myself above my left knee that is a perfect map of ¹⁵⁴the London Underground.

Well — give him here, Hagrid — we’d better get this over with.”

Dumbledore took Harry in his arms and turned toward the Dursleys’ house.

“Could I — could I say good-bye to him, sir?” asked Hagrid. He bent his great, shaggy head over Harry and gave him what must have been a very scratchy, whiskery kiss. Then, suddenly, Hagrid let out a howl like a wounded dog.

“Shhh!” hissed Professor McGonagall, “you’ll wake ¹⁵⁵the Muggles!”

“S-s-sorry,” sobbed Hagrid, taking out a large, spotted handkerchief and burying his face in it. “But I c-c-can’t stand it — Lily an’ James dead — an’ poor little Harry off ter live with Muggles —”

“Yes, yes, it’s all very sad, but get a grip on yourself, Hagrid, or we’ll be found,” Professor McGonagall whispered, patting Hagrid gingerly on ¹⁵⁶the arm as Dumbledore stepped over ¹⁵⁷the low garden wall and walked to ¹⁵⁸the front door. He laid Harry gently on ¹⁵⁹the doorstep, took a letter out of his cloak, tucked it inside Harry’s blankets, and then came back to the other two. For a full minute the three of them stood and looked at ¹⁶⁰the little bundle; Hagrid’s shoulders shook, Professor McGonagall blinked furiously, and ¹⁶¹the twinkling light that usually shone from Dumbledore’s eyes seemed to have gone out.

“Well,” said Dumbledore finally, “that’s that. We’ve no business staying here. We may as well go and join ¹⁶²the celebrations.”

“Yeah,” said Hagrid in a very muffled voice, “I’d best get this bike away. G’night, Professor McGonagall — Professor Dumbledore, sir.”

Wiping his streaming eyes on his jacket sleeve, Hagrid swung himself onto ¹⁶³the motorcycle and kicked ¹⁶⁴the engine into life; with a roar it rose into ¹⁶⁵the air and off into ¹⁶⁶the night.

“I shall see you soon, I expect, Professor McGonagall,” said Dumbledore, nodding to her. Professor McGonagall blew her nose in reply.

Dumbledore turned and walked back down ¹⁶⁷the street. On ¹⁶⁸the corner he stopped and took out ¹⁶⁹the silver Put-Outer. He clicked it once, and twelve balls of light sped back to their street lamps so that Privet Drive glowed suddenly orange and he could make out a tabby cat slinking around ¹⁷⁰the corner at ¹⁷¹the other end of ¹⁷²the street. He could just see ¹⁷³the bundle of blankets on ¹⁷⁴the step of number four.

“Good luck, Harry,” he murmured. He turned on his heel and with a swish of his cloak, he was gone.

A breeze ruffled ¹⁷⁵the neat hedges of Privet Drive, which lay silent

and tidy under ¹⁷⁶the inky sky, ¹⁷⁷the very last place you would expect astonishing things to happen. Harry Potter rolled over inside his blankets without waking up. One small hand closed on ¹⁷⁸the letter beside him and he slept on, not knowing he was special, not knowing he was famous, not knowing he would be woken in a few hours' time by Mrs. Dursley's scream as she opened ¹⁷⁹the front door to put out ¹⁸⁰the milk bottles, nor that he would spend ¹⁸¹the next few weeks being prodded and pinched by his cousin Dudley. . . . He couldn't know that at this very moment, people meeting in secret all over ¹⁸²the country were holding up their glasses and saying in hushed voices: "To Harry Potter — ¹⁸³the boy who lived!"

¹⁸⁴THE VANISHING GLASS

Nearly ten years had passed since the Dursleys had woken up to find their nephew on ¹⁸⁵the front step, but Privet Drive had hardly changed at all. ¹⁸⁶The sun rose on ¹⁸⁷the same tidy front gardens and lit up ¹⁸⁸the brass number four on the Dursleys' front door; it crept into their living room, which was almost exactly ¹⁸⁹the same as it had been on ¹⁹⁰the night when Mr. Dursley had seen that fateful news report about ¹⁹¹the owls. Only ¹⁹²the photographs on ¹⁹³the mantelpiece really showed how much time had passed. Ten years ago, there had been lots of pictures of what looked like a large pink beach ball wearing different-colored bonnets — but Dudley Dursley was no longer a baby, and now ¹⁹⁴the photographs showed a large blond boy riding his first bicycle, on a carousel at ¹⁹⁵the fair, playing a computer game with his father, being hugged and kissed by his mother. ¹⁹⁶The room held no sign at all that another boy lived in ¹⁹⁷the house, too.

Yet Harry Potter was still there, asleep at ¹⁹⁸the moment, but not for long. His Aunt Petunia was awake and it was her shrill voice that made ¹⁹⁹the first noise of ²⁰⁰the day.

"Up! Get up! Now!"

Harry woke with a start. His aunt rapped on ²⁰¹the door again.

"Up!" she screeched. Harry heard her walking toward ²⁰²the kitchen and then ²⁰³the sound of ²⁰⁴the frying pan being put on ²⁰⁵the stove. He rolled onto his back and tried to remember ²⁰⁶the dream he had been having. It had been a good one. There had been a flying motorcycle in it. He had a funny feeling he'd had ²⁰⁷the same dream before.

His aunt was back outside ²⁰⁸the door.

J.K. Rowling text (Albanian version) – definite occurrences

Rowling J.K. (2002) Harry Potter dhe guri filozofal

⁰⁰¹FËMIJA QË I SHPËTOI ⁰⁰²VDEKJES

Zoti dhe zonja Dërsli, që banonin në ⁰⁰³numrin 4 të ⁰⁰⁴rrugës Privet Drajv e

thoshin me krenari se ishin njerëz krejt normalë, shyqyr⁰⁰⁵Zotit. Për ta nuk mund të mendohej kurrëse se kishin të bënin me gjëra të çuditshme apo të mistershme, sepse ata nuk i praninin aspak marrëvira të tilla.

Zoti Dërsli ishte drejtor i një firme që quhej Grunings, e cila prodhonte trapanë. Ishte madhosh, dërdëng, thuajse fare pa qafë dhe me një palë mustaqe të mëdha. Zonja Dërsli ishte thatime, flokëverdhe dhe me një qafë të gjatë pothuaj sa⁰⁰⁶dyfishi i një qafe të zakonshme, gjë që i hynte në punë, meqë kalonte⁰⁰⁷pjesën më të madhe të⁰⁰⁸kohës duke e zgjatur tej⁰⁰⁹gardhit të⁰¹⁰kopshtit për të përgjuar⁰¹¹fqinjët. Dërslit kishin një djalkë që quhej Dadli dhe, sipas tyre, nuk kishte fëmijë më të bukur në botë.

I kishin të gjitha ç' u donte⁰¹²zemra, por kishin edhe një të fshehtë dhe kishin frikë të madhe se mos ua zbulonte kush. Nuk besonin se mund ta duronin që të tjerët të mësonin⁰¹³fshehtë e Poterëve. Zonja Poter ishte⁰¹⁴motra e⁰¹⁵zonjës Dërsli, por kishin vite pa u parë. Madje zonja Dërsli shtirej sikur nuk e kishte motër, sepse zonja Poter dhe ai⁰¹⁶burri i saj që s'vlente një dysh, s'kish si të ishin më të ndryshëm prej tyre. Ata dridheshin vetëm kur mendonin se ç' do të thoshin⁰¹⁷qinjët po të dukeshin aty rrotull⁰¹⁸Poterët. E dinin se edhe⁰¹⁹Poterët kishin një djalë të vogël, por s'e kishin parë kurrë.

Dhe ai çun ishte një tjetër arsye për t' u qëndruar larg Poterëve: nuk donin që Dadli të kishte shoqëri me një fëmijë si ai.

Kur u zgjuan⁰²⁰bashkëshortët Dërsli, ⁰²¹mëngjesin e asaj të marte të përhimët dhe të veshur, kur zë fill⁰²²historia jonë, në⁰²³qiellin mbushur me re nuk vërehej asgjë që mund të shtynte të parashikoheshin ato gjëra të çuditshme dhe misterioze që do të bënin vaki mbas pak kohe, në mbarë⁰²⁴vendin. Zoti Dërsli, duke kënduar me vete me zë të ulët, ashtu, pa u menduar gjatë, zgjodhi⁰²⁵kravatën nga⁰²⁶rafti i⁰²⁷teshave dhe⁰²⁸zonja Dërsli vazhdoi të llototiste pa prarë, ndërsa, me mundim të madh, përpiqej ta lidhte në⁰²⁹karrigen për fëmijë Dadlin, që po bërtiste me sa zë kishte në kokë.

Askush nuk e pa⁰³⁰bufin e madh pendëmurrme që kaloi duke fëshfëritur⁰³¹krahët përpara⁰³²dritares.

Në⁰³³orën tetë e gjysmë zoti Dërsli mori⁰³⁴valixhen e tij të vogël, e çiku lehtë me buzë⁰³⁵faqen e⁰³⁶të shoqes dhe u përpoq të puthte Dadlin, por nuk mbërriti sepse, atë çast, pre e një teke të papërmbajtur, ⁰³⁷fëmija po flakte⁰³⁸biskotat prej tërshëre mbas⁰³⁹murit. – Çapkën i vogël! – i tha duke qeshur zoti Dërsli tek po dilte nga⁰⁴⁰shtëpia. Hipi në makinë dhe eci mbrapsht nëpër⁰⁴¹rrugicën e⁰⁴²shtëpisë numër katër.

Aty te⁰⁴³cepi i⁰⁴⁴rrugës vuri re⁰⁴⁵shenjat e para e⁰⁴⁶dëçkaje të çuditshme: një mace ishte duke shqyrtuar një hartë. Për një çast zoti Dërsli nuk e rroku⁰⁴⁷pamjen, pastaj ktheu menjëherë⁰⁴⁸kokën dhe shikoi përsëri. Një mace me qime ngjyrë hiri me shirita të zinj po rrinte mbi bisht, në⁰⁴⁹këndin e Privet Drajvit, por shenjë harte nuk dukej për be. Ç' dreqin kishte? Si duket, duhejt' i kishte punuar⁰⁵⁰drita ndonjë rreng! Fërkoj⁰⁵¹sytë dhe ia nguli maces edhe ajo e shikoi. Teksa⁰⁵²makina ktheu te⁰⁵³cepi i⁰⁵⁴rrugës dhe eci një copë herë, zoti Dërsli s'ia shqiti⁰⁵⁵sytë⁰⁵⁶maces në⁰⁵⁷pasqyrkën e vogël të⁰⁵⁸makinës. Në ato çaste⁰⁵⁹kafsha po lexonte⁰⁶⁰tabelën rrugore ku shkruhej Privet Drajv. Jo, po e shikonte, ⁰⁶¹macet nuk dinë t' i lexojnë⁰⁶²hartat dhe as⁰⁶³tabelat rrugore.

Zoti Dërsli u përshkund nga ato mendime dhe e largoi nga⁰⁶⁴mendja

macen. Ndërsa ishte duke u drejtuar për në qytet, s'mendoi tjetër përveç ⁰⁶⁵porosisë së madhe për trapanë që shpresonte t'i bënin atë ditë. Por kur mbërriti në ⁰⁶⁶rrethinat e ⁰⁶⁷qytetit, ndodhi diçka tjetër që ia largoi trapanet nga mendja. Kishte hasur në ⁰⁶⁸rrëmetin e zakonshëm të ⁰⁶⁹mëngjesit dhe vuri re se rreth e qark kishte një tufë njerëzish të veshur në mënyrë të çuditshme. Njerëz që kishin ⁰⁷⁰krahëve mantele. ⁰⁷¹Zotit Dërsli s'i pëlqenin ⁰⁷²njerëzit që visheshin në mënyrë të çuditshme: veç t'i shihje disa të rinj si sajoheshin! I shkoi nëpër mend se do të ishte ndonjë modë e re kot më kot.

Ndërsa po trokiste ⁰⁷³gishtat mbi timon të ⁰⁷⁴makinës, vështrimi i shkoi mbi një tufë asi tuhafësh, krejt pranë tij. Seç po i përshpëritnin të ndezur njëri-tjetrit. Zotit Dërsli iu shtua ⁰⁷⁵inati kur pa se midis tyre kishte edhe nja dy që s'ishin aspak të rinj në moshë. Ç'ishte ajo punë? Njëri prej tyre duhej të ishte edhe më i shkuar në moshë se ai vetë dhe mbante një mantel jeshil! Sa i pafytyrë! Po pastaj i shkoi ndër mend se mund të ishte ndonjë punë boshe. Pa tjetër! Ishin njerëz që mblidhnin ndihma për ndanjë shkak. Po, pikërisht ashtu duhej të ishte. Në atë çast ⁰⁷⁶trafikullor filloi të rridhte përsëri dhe disa minuta më vonë zoti ⁰⁷⁷Dërsli mbërriti në ⁰⁷⁸parkimin e Gruningsit duke menduar përsëri vetëm ⁰⁷⁹punën e trapanëve.

Në ⁰⁸⁰zyrën e tij që ishte në ⁰⁸¹katin e nëntë, zoti Dërsli ulej gjithmonë me ⁰⁸²shpinën kthyer nga ⁰⁸³dritarja. Po të mos e kishte këtë shprehi, atë mëngjes do ta kishte pasur akoma edhe më të vështirë të përqëndrohej tek ⁰⁸⁴trapanet e tij.

Ai nuk i pa ⁰⁸⁵bufët që po fluturonin tufa-tufa në mes të ⁰⁸⁶ditës, por ⁰⁸⁷turmën e njerëzve në rrugë po. Dhe po i dëftenin me gisht tek kalonin vërtik, njëri mbas tjetrit, mbi ⁰⁸⁸kokat e tyre. ⁰⁸⁹Pjesa më e madhe e atyre ⁰⁹⁰njerëzve s'kishin parë kurrë as ⁰⁹¹natën një buf. Megjithatë, zoti Dërsli kaloi një paradite krejt të qetë, pa kurrfarë bufësh. E humbi toruan me pesë vetë të ndryshëm. Bëri shumë telefonata me rëndësi dhe ia këputi edhe ndonjë të bërtiturore. Derisa erdhi ⁰⁹²koha e ⁰⁹³drekës që me qejf. Atëherë, edhe për të shkruar ⁰⁹⁴këmbët, vendosi ta kapërcente ⁰⁹⁵rugën dhe të shkonte të blinte një kulaç të ⁰⁹⁶bukëpjekësi përballë.

I kishte harruar krejt ⁰⁹⁷njerëzit me mantel, derisa kaloi pranë një turme të vogël pikërisht përballë ⁰⁹⁸bukëpjekësit. U hodhi një sy kalimthi tërë inat.

Nuk e kuptoi pse, por ndjeu njëfarë ⁰⁹⁹sikleti. Edhe ata po përshpëritnin të përndezur, por nuk dukeshin kurrkund komet për të mbledhur të holla. Kur u kaloi përsëri pranë, tek po kthehej nga ¹⁰⁰bukëpjekësi, duke mbajtur në dorë një alamet ¹⁰¹kulaçi të mbështjellë me letër, i rroku ¹⁰²veshi diçka nga ¹⁰³biseda e tyre.

„ Po, po, vetë Poterët, kështu kam dëgjuar....“

„.....po, djali i tyre Harri...“

Zoti Dërsli ndali në vend. E zuri ¹⁰⁴frika. U kthye për të parë atë grupim ¹⁰⁵shpërrallësish, dhe u bë gati t'u thoshte dy fjalë, pastaj ndërroi mendje.

Kapërceu ¹⁰⁶rrugën turravrap dhe mbërriti me nxitim në zyrë: e porositi ¹⁰⁷sekretaren që të mos e shqetësonin kurrsesi, mbërtheu ¹⁰⁸telefonin dhe filloi të bënte ¹⁰⁹numrin e ¹¹⁰shtëpisë, por ndryshoi mendim. E uli ¹¹¹dorezën e ¹¹²telefonit, lëmoi ¹¹³mustaqet, duke menduar... Jo, ishte

treguar budalla. Në fund të ¹¹⁴fundit Poter nuk ishte një emër i pazakontë. Ishte i bindur se kishte me mijëra njerëz që quheshin Poter dhe që kishin një djalë me emrin Harri. Pastaj, tashti që po e mendonte mirë, nuk ishte i sigurt nëse ¹¹⁵nipi i tij quhej vërtet Harri. Në fund të ¹¹⁶fundit, s'e kishte parë asnjë herë. Mund ta kishte ¹¹⁷emrin Harvej, apo Harold. S'kishte pse ta fuste në merak ¹¹⁸zonjën Dërsli; ajo nxehej gjithmonë kur i flisnin për të ¹¹⁹motrën!

Dhe nuk i vinte faj: sikur ta kishte pasur ai një motër si ajo...Por prapëseprapë ata njerëz të mbështjellë me mantele.

Atë pasdite e pati më të zorshme të përqendrohej mbi ¹²⁰trapanet e tij dhe kur doli nga ¹²¹zyra pikërisht në ¹²²orën pesë, ishte ende aq i menduar sa, me të kapërcyer ¹²³pragun, shkoi e u përplas me një kalimtar.

- Më falni, - i tha nëpër dhëmbë, ndërsa ai ¹²⁴qyqari, - një burrë i moshuar dhe trupimët – u pengua dhe për pak sa s'ra buzë e hundë. U desh të kalonin disa sekonda para se ¹²⁵zoti Dërsli të kujtohej që ai tjetri kishte një mantel ngjyrë vjollcë. Por ai burrë i imët nuk dukej as pak i zemëruar që për pak sa s'e kishin shembur përtokë. Përkundrazi, ¹²⁶fytyra iu çel me një buzëqeshje të përzemërt dhe, me një zë si pipëz, që tërhoqi ¹²⁷vëmendjen e ¹²⁸kalimtarëve, tha: - Mos më kërkoni ndjesë, i dashur zotni, sepse sot s'ka gjë që të ma prishë ¹²⁹qejfin! Gëzohuni sepse TI-E-Di-Kushi më në fund u largua! Edhe ¹³⁰babanacët si ¹³¹puna juaj duhet ta kremtojnë këtë ditë të lume, fort të lume!

Me të thënë ato fjalë, ¹³²plakushi e përqafoi ¹³³zotin Dërsli, duke e shtrënguar fort në bel, pastaj u largua.

¹³⁴Zoti Dërsli mbeti si hu. E kishte përqaftuar një njeri krejt i panjohur. Pastaj iu kujtua se ai e kishte quajtur „babanac“, edhe pse se kutonte ç'donte të thoshte. Ishte hutuar sa s'thuhet. Nxitoi të shkonte te ¹³⁵makina dhe u nis për në shtëpi, duke shpresuar se ç'i kishte ndodhur kishte qenë sajësë e ¹³⁶fantazisë, gjë që më përpara as do t'i shkonte ndër mend, sepse nuk i miratonte ¹³⁷fantazitë.

Me t'u futur në ¹³⁸rrugëzën ku ndodhej ¹³⁹numri katër i Privet Drajvit, më e para gjë që dalloi – dhe që me siguri nuk ia ndryshoi ¹⁴⁰gjendjen në të cilën ndodhej – që ¹⁴¹macja e përhimët me vija të zeza që kishte parë atij mëngjesi. Ishte ulur mbi ¹⁴²murin rrethues të ¹⁴³kopshtit. Nuk pat dyshim se ishte po ajo e mëngjesit: kishte po ato shenja rreth ¹⁴⁴syve.

- Çët! – i bërtiti zoti Dërsli.

¹⁴⁵Macja s'lëvizi vendit. Ia nguli sytë dhe e pa e ngrysur. Zoti Dërsli vrau ¹⁴⁶mendjen nëse macet silleshin zakonisht në atë mënyrë. U përpoq të merrte veten dhe u fut në shtëpi. Zonjës Dërsli ¹⁴⁷dita i kishte shkuar mbarë: një ditë krejt e zakonshme si gjithë të tjerat. Duke ngrënë ¹⁴⁸darkën, i tregoi fije e për ¹⁴⁹telashet që kishte pasur zonja E-Shtëpisë-Ngjitur me ¹⁵⁰të bijën dhe pastaj që Dadli kishte mësuar një shprehje të re: „Kurrën e kurrës“! Zoti Dërsli u përpoq të sillej normalisht. Kur e vunë në shtrat, shkoi në ¹⁵¹dhomën e ndenjes mu në kohë për të dëgjuar ¹⁵²lajmet e fundit në televizor.

„Dhe, më në fund të gjithë ¹⁵³vrojtuesit e ¹⁵⁴shpendëve, deklarojnë se sot, Në tërë ¹⁵⁵territorin kombëtar, ¹⁵⁶bufët janë sjellë në mënyrë krejt të pazakontë edhe pse zakonisht dalin ¹⁵⁷natën për të gjuajtur dhe rrallë herë mund t'i shohësh ¹⁵⁸ditën, deri në të gdhirë janë vënë re me qindra bufë

që fluturonin në të katër ¹⁵⁹anët.

¹⁶⁰Ekspertët nuk dinë ta shpjegojnë pse, krejt përnjëherësh, ¹⁶¹bufët e kanë ndryshuar ¹⁶²ritmin të gjumë/zgjimit. ¹⁶³Spikeri buzëqeshi lehtë. „Mister i madh!“

Dhe tashti e ka ¹⁶⁴fjalën Xhim MekGafini për ¹⁶⁵parashikimin e ¹⁶⁶motit.

A parashikohen rreshje të tjera bufësh sonte, Xhim?

- Po të të flas haptas, Ted – ia ktheu ¹⁶⁷meteorologu – s’ di ç’ të të them për këtë, por sot nuk janë sjellë në mënyrë të çuditshme vetëm ¹⁶⁸bufët.

¹⁶⁹Vrojtuesit e disa lokaliteve larg njëri-tjetrit, sikurse janë Kenti, Jorkshajri dhe Dandi, më kanë njoftuar me telefon se në vend të ¹⁷⁰shiut që kisha parashikuar dje, kanë parë një rrëmet yjesh të këputur. Kush e di? Mbase kanë kremtuar para kohe Natën e Zjarreve. Por Nata e Zjarreve vjen mbas një jave! Sidoqoftë, mund të të siguroj se sonte do të bjerë shi.

¹⁷¹Zoti Dërsli mbeti si i ngrirë në poltronë. Yje të këputur në të gjithë Britaninë e Madhe? Bufë që fluturojnë ditën? Njerëz misteriozë që sorrollaten gjithandej të mbështjellë me mantele? Pastaj ata zëra, ato pëshpërma për

¹⁷²Poterët...

¹⁷³Zonja Dërsli hyri në ¹⁷⁴homën e ¹⁷⁵ndenjes dhe solli dy filxhanë me çaj.

S’kishte ç’ të bënte: duhej të thoshte diçka. Qëroi ¹⁷⁶fytin me nervozitet: - Hëm, Petunia, grua e dashur, mos ke folur gjë me ¹⁷⁷motrën tënde këto ¹⁷⁸ditët e fundit?

Siç e kishte parashikuar, ¹⁷⁹zonja Dërsli u hutua dhe u nxeh. Në fund të

¹⁸⁰fundit qenë mësuar të bënë gjasmë s’kishte motër.

- Jo, - iu përgjigj thatë. – Pse?

- S’ e di. Por në ¹⁸¹lajmet e ¹⁸²natës thanë ca gjëra të çuditshme, - shfryu ¹⁸³zoti Dërsli. – Bufë...yje të këputur...dhe sot, në qytet, kishte plot njerëz tuhafë...

- Po pastaj çfarë? – ia plasi ¹⁸⁴zonja Dërsli.

- Hiç asgjë, po mendoja...mbase diçka që ka lidhje me...e kuptove, jo?...dhe ¹⁸⁵me familjen e saj.

Zonja Dërsli gjerbi ¹⁸⁶çajin me buzë të shtrënguara. Ndërkohë ¹⁸⁷zoti Dërsli po vriste ¹⁸⁸mendjen në do ta gjente ¹⁸⁹guximin t’i thoshte se kishte dëgjuar të përmendnin ¹⁹⁰emrin „Potter“. E ndau të mos guxonte. Dhe me një zë sa s’kish si bëhej më i zakonshëm, tha: - ¹⁹¹I biri...duhet të jetë moshatar me Dadlin, apo jo?

- Them se po, - u përgjigj zonja Dërsli, ¹⁹²trupin drejt dhe e ngrirë si bisht fshese.

- Dhe si quhet? Hauard, apo jo?

- Harri! Që në fund të ¹⁹³fundit është një emër fort i rëndomtë daç ta dish.

- Ke të drejtë, - tha zoti Dërsli, me ¹⁹⁴zembrën që po i rrihte fort. – Jam plotësisht i një mendjeje me ty.

U ngjitën lart në dhomë për të fjetur dhe nuk ndërruan më asnjë fajle për atë çështje. Ndërsa ¹⁹⁵e shoqja ishte në banjë, ¹⁹⁶zoti Dërsli iu afrua me kujdes ¹⁹⁷dritares së ¹⁹⁸dhomës së ¹⁹⁹gjumit dhe shikoi jashtë në oborr. ²⁰⁰Macja ishte gjithnjë aty. Po vrojtonte Privet Drayvin sikur të qe duke pritur diçka.

Mos ²⁰¹fantazia e tij rendte shumë? A thua të tëra këto kishin ndonjë lidhje me Poterët? Nëse kishin të bënin....domethënë nëse merrej vesh që ata ishin farefis i një çifti ...që shkurt, nuk besonte se do ta duronte.

Ranë në shtrat. ²⁰²Gruan e zuri ²⁰³gjumi menjëherë, por ai mbeti syhapur, duke përsjellë gjithçka në mendje. ²⁰⁴Mendimi i fundit dhe ngushëllues që mendoj para se ta zinte ²⁰⁵gjumi, qe se, edhe sikur Poterët të kishin të bënin me të vërtetë sado pak me atë mesele, s' ishte aspak e thënë se do të ngatërroheshin në të ai dhe ²⁰⁶gruaja e tij. Poterët e dinin mirëfill ç' mendonte ai dhe Petunia për ta dhe për ²⁰⁷njerëzit e ²⁰⁸kallëpit të tyre...S' e merrte dot me mend se si mund të përziheshin, si do të vinin ²⁰⁹punët – dhe në atë pikë gogësiu dhe u kthye nga ²¹⁰ana tjetër – ajo çështje nuk mund t' i interesonte...

Por gabohej rëndë.

Nëse zoti Dërsli ishte kredhur në një gjumë të trazuar, ²¹¹macja, ulur majë atij ²¹²murit jashtë, s' jepte grimë shenje se kishte gjumë. Rrinte pa lëvizur, si shtatore, me sy të ngulur në një pikë dhe pa rrahur ²¹³qerpikët, në ²¹⁴këndin përballë Privet Drajvit dhe nuk u drodh fare as kur, në ²¹⁵rrugën pranë, ²¹⁶sporteli i një makine u përplas fort; as edhe kur dy bufë i kaluan si shigjetë sipër ²¹⁷kokës. Pa ardhur ²¹⁸mesnata, ²¹⁹macja nuk lëvizte.

Në ²²⁰cepin e ²²¹rrugës ku po vrojtonte ²²²macja, u duk një njeri; por u shfaq aq befaz dhe heshturazi, sa mund të mendoje që kishte mbirë nga ²²³dheu. ²²⁴Bishti i ²²⁵maces u drodh dhe ²²⁶sytë iu shndërruan në dy plasa.

Në Privet Drajv s' ishte parë kurrë krijesë e atillë. Ishte i lartë, thatim dhe shumë plak, po të gjykoje nga ²²⁷ngjyra argjend e ²²⁸flokëve dhe e ²²⁹mjekrës, që ishin aq të gjata, sa i mbante të futura në rrip. Kishte veshur një palë roba të gjata, një mantel ngjyrë purpuri që i zvarritej përtokë dhe një palë çizme qafëgjata me taka të larta dhe me tokëza. Mbas ²³⁰syzeve në trajtë gjysmëhëne, kishte sy ngjyrë të kaltër të çelur, sy të ndritshëm dhe që i shkëlqenin; ²³¹hundën e kishte shumë të kthyer, sikur ta pas thyer të paktën dy herë. ²³²Burri quhej Albus Urtimor.

Albus Urtimori dukej se s' qe kujtuar që kishte mbërritur në një rrugë ku gjithçka, që nga ²³³emri i tij dhe deri tek ²³⁴çizmet, nuk ishin gjëra të pëlqyeshme. Po jepte e po merrte nën mantel, duke rrëmuar për të gjetur diçka. Por u duk që e kuptoi që po e përgjonin, sepse, aty për aty, shikoi ²³⁵macen, që po e këqyrte gjithnjë me sy të ngulur, nga ²³⁶skaji tjetër i ²³⁷rrugës. Nuk dihej pse, por ²³⁸vështrimi i ²³⁹maces sikur e zbaviti. Nënqeshi me vete dhe tha nëpër dhëmbë: „Duhej ta kisha marrë me mend“.

E gjeti atë që po kërkonte në ²⁴⁰xhepin e brendshëm të ²⁴¹mantelit. Dukej si çakmak prej ²⁴²argjendi. E hapi me një të kërcitur, e mbajti përpjetë dhe e ndezi. ²⁴³Feneri i ²⁴⁴rrugës aty pranë u dogj me një krismë. E shkrepiti edhe një herë dhe kësaj rradhe u dogj ²⁴⁵feneri më pranë. Dymbëdhjetë herë e ndezi atë ²⁴⁶„fikësin“ e tij, derisa ajo rrugë mbeti e ndriçuar vetëm nga dy drita të vockla tutje: ²⁴⁷sytë e ²⁴⁸maces që po e shikonin. Në atë çast kushdo që do të hidhte ²⁴⁹vështrimin jashtë ²⁵⁰dritares – qoftë edhe zoti Dërsli me ²⁵¹sytë e tij zhbirues si të ²⁵²sqarshit – nuk do të dallonte dot se ç' po ngjiste në rrugë.

Urtimori e futi përsëri në xhep të ²⁵³mantelit ²⁵⁴„fikësin“ dhe iu drejtua ²⁵⁵numrit katër të Privet Drajvit. U ul përmbi ²⁵⁶murin e ulët, pranë ²⁵⁷maces. Nuk ia hodhi ²⁵⁸sytë, por mbas pak i foli.

- Pa shiko ç' rastësi! Edhe ju qenkeni këtu, ²⁵⁹profesoresha MekGur? Iu kthye ²⁶⁰maces me buzë ndër gaz, por ajo ishte zhdukur.